



Gc  
942.0006  
C14p  
New ser.  
no.61  
1751297

REYNOLDS HISTORICAL  
GENEALOGY COLLECTION

ALLEN COUNTY PUBLIC LIBRARY



3 1833 00729 1468

Digitized by the Internet Archive  
in 2010 with funding from  
Allen County Public Library Genealogy Center

<http://www.archive.org/details/publications61camd>

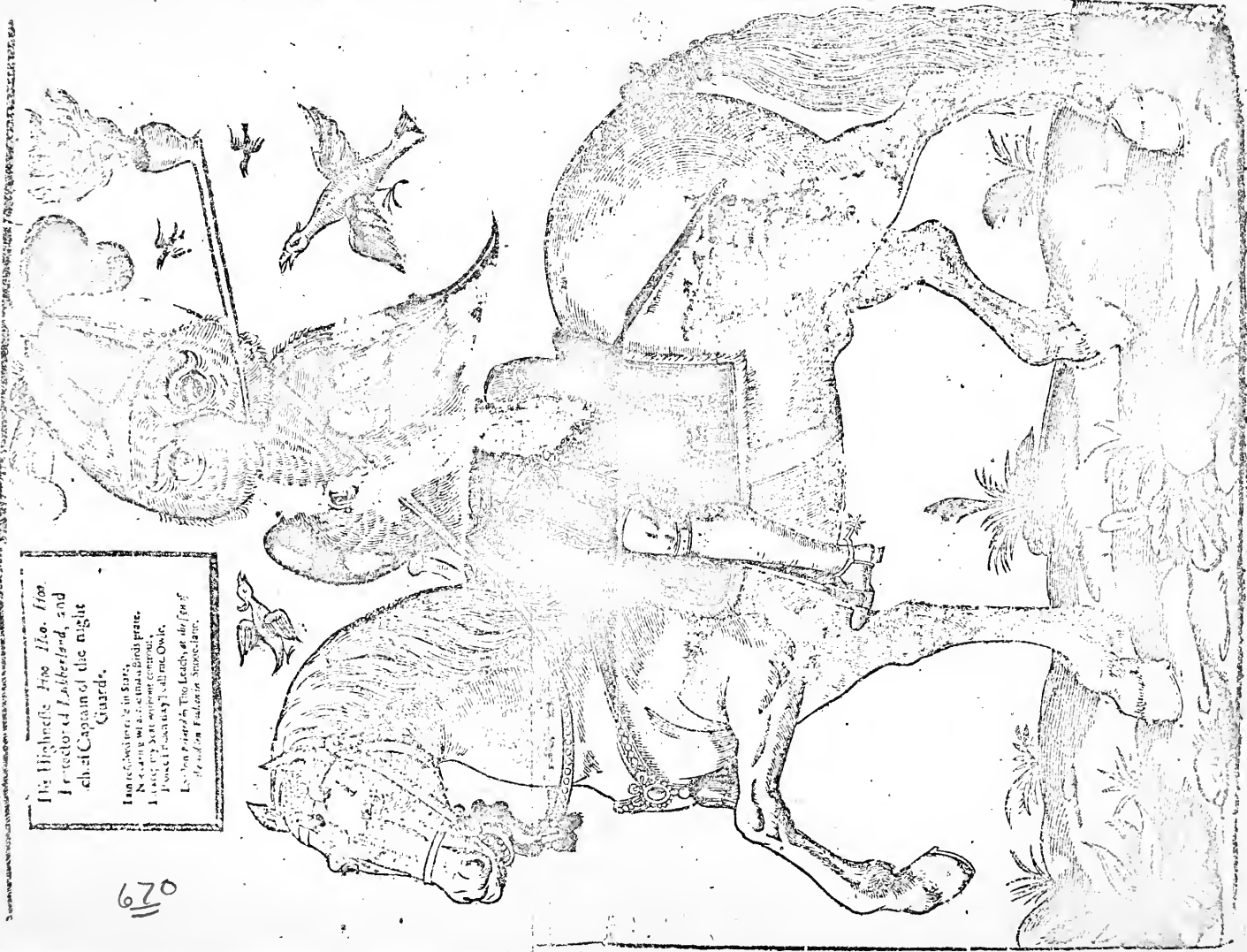






His Highness the Hon. the  
 Protector of Litterland, and  
 his Captain of the night  
 Guard.

Having been in the State,  
 Not being in a certain kind of state,  
 In the night, the night, the night,  
 In the night, the night, the night,  
 In the night, the night, the night,



A CARICATURE OF THE PROTECTOR RICHARD CROMWELL:

From the Clarke Collection.



THE CLARKE PAPERS.

—M3—

SELECTIONS FROM THE PAPERS OF WILLIAM CLARKE

*Secretary to the Council of the Army, 1647-1649, and to General  
Monck and the Convention of the Army in Scotland, 1651-1659.*

EDITED FOR THE ROYAL HISTORICAL SOCIETY

BY

C. H. FIRTH, M.A.

VOLUME III.

LONGMANS, GREEN, AND CO.

25 PATERNOSTER ROW, LONDON

NEW YORK AND BOSTON

1899

F-4553.153

1751297

THE CLARKE PAPERS.





## PREFACE

THE documents contained in this third instalment of the 'Clarke Papers' are selected from volumes xxv. to xxxi. of the MSS. in Worcester College Library. These volumes consist mainly of newletters sent from the Lord-provosts of the city in England, or from persons connected with the army, to the headquarters of the army in Scotland. Interspersed among them are a few private letters addressed to General Monk, and copies of other documents which came into William Clarke's possession during his tenure of office as Monk's secretary. Clarke had been left behind in Scotland in August 1651, when Cromwell marched into England in pursuit of Charles II., and there are many letters from him, giving an account of the progress of the subjugation of Scotland by Generals Monk and Deane. He acted as secretary to Colonel Robert Lilburne during Lilburne's command in Scotland, and when Lilburne left Scotland he recommended him warmly to his successor. After describing the position of affairs in Scotland to Monk, and stating the measures he thought expedient, he concluded: 'I presume to recomend unto you Mr. Clarke, an old Gentleman of the State's, and one that would bee most usefull and servisable to your selfe, havinge the transactions of all affaires that have pass'd both in Major Generall Deane's time and myne in this Nation, and one whome I conceive you have sufficient experience [of], both for his abilitie and honestie, and knowes as well as I can informe you how servicable he may be unto you if



you thinke fit to continue him in this place as Secretary, which he hath supplyed since the late Major General Deane went hence, and wherein I thinke noe man could be more honest and active. Wherefore presuming that he is soe well knowne to you, and that his meritt will sufficiently speake for him, I shall not be farther troublesome then to beg your pardon, and intreat you to be confident it is out of a real respect and honour towards you that I have taken this confidence upon mee.' (*Journal*, 21, 1654.)

A number of the letters and papers contained in volumes xxv. to xxxi. of the Clarke MSS. relate to the military administration of Scotland during the period from 1653 to 1659. These with other papers of the same nature have been collected and published for the Scottish History Society, in two volumes entitled 'Scotland and the Commonwealth' (1895), and 'Scotland and the Protectorate' (1899).

This volume of the 'Clarke Papers' contains therefore few references to Scotland. There is, however, a curious account of an interview between the Protector and the Scottish representatives in the Parliament of 1654, and there are some allusions to the debates on the union of the two nations in the Protector's Second Parliament (pp. 22, 50, 81, 96).

The greater part of this volume consists of newsletters sent from England to the headquarters of the army in Scotland in order to keep the commander there and his officers informed of the condition of affairs at home and abroad. Two or three such letters were regularly despatched every week by agents employed for the purpose, who were usually either officials or persons in some way connected with the army.

Of the newswriters whose letters appear in these pages, the chief were George Downing—sometime scout-master general of the army in Scotland, and subsequently one of Cromwell's diplomatic agents; Gilbert Mabbott, a connection of William Clarke's, many of whose letters are printed in the preceding volumes; and John Rushworth, the author of the 'Historical Collections.' All sign



the letters with initials merely. These newsletters are so numerous that it was impossible to print more than a selection from them, and in many cases a short extract from a letter has been considered sufficient. For much of the information which these letters generally contain is also to be found in 'Mercurius Politicus,' and it was not desirable to reprint matter already accessible, and in itself of no particular importance, which would have involved the exclusion of more valuable historical material.<sup>1</sup> On the other hand, these newsletters contain personal details about the Protector and other people of note which the newspapers do not give. They supply in addition a considerable amount of military news, as to promotions, movements of regiments, trials by court-martial, and other matters specially interesting to soldiers, of which the newspapers say little or nothing. They possess also a certain value as representing the impression which the political events recorded produced upon the army and persons connected with it, and the views which the military party wished others to accept.

The letter describing Cromwell's expulsion of the Long Parliament supplies an instance of this. There is an obvious attempt to soften and tone down the violence and illegality of the general's proceedings. Cromwell's denunciatory speech is merely alluded to as 'something said by the general;' the Speaker is described as 'modestly pulled' out of the chair, and Parliament as 'dissolved with as little noyse as can bee imagined' (pp. 1, 2). The letters which follow this contain many new details about the incidents of the few weeks which intervened between the expulsion of the Long Parliament and the meeting of its successor. Cromwell used his power with moderation, suppressing an abusive ballad against the late Parliament, which was sung generally through London (p. 3). But when eleven aldermen petitioned that that assembly might sit again, he told the petitioners 'hee took it ill they should gee about to

<sup>1</sup> Specimens of similar newsletters sent to and from one of the Protector's foreign agents are to be found in Robert Vaughan's *The Protectorate of Oliver Cromwell illustrated in a series of letters between Dr. John Feli, Sir Samuel Morland &c., 1658*.



obstruct the proceedings for the good of the people, and that himself and those about him (turning to the officers) would make good what was done with their bloods.' The subscribers of the petition were promptly deprived of any offices they held under the state (pp. 6, 7).<sup>1</sup> Other letters describe the schemes for a new constitution, and the selection of the persons called together to form the Little Parliament (pp. 1, 6-8). Its sudden conclusion is briefly related, and the expulsion of three of its members who refused to abdicate their power is told in the same way as the expulsion of the Long Parliament was. Twenty-seven members remained in the House, to whom 'Colonel Gough presently came, and with all meekness told them that he was fearfull th<sup>t</sup> th<sup>e</sup> stay might prove prejudiciall to the Commonwealth.' They asked if he had authority, and he said he had none, 'but sweetly agreed it with them,' and when they refused to be convinced 'he opened the doore, and presently entered one file of Muskettiers, upon whose appearance the remaining part of the House withdrew' (p. 11).

In September 1651 the Protector called his first Parliament, and the dissatisfaction which the establishment of the Protectorate and the nature of the new constitution had produced among some of the officers began to reveal itself. Two Colonels, Okey and Alured, were tried by court-martial, and a third, Saunders, was called upon to deliver up his commission, for promoting a petition which attacked the Instrument of Government (pp. 10-12, 17). Two ministers, Peake and Simpson, preached against the Government, the latter denouncing the 'Triers' as anti-

<sup>1</sup> Another account of Cromwell's speech runs thus: 'The General told them, that what was done was done; that the King's head was not taken off because he was King, nor the Lord's head a file because Lords, neither was the Parliament dissolved because they were a Parliament, but it is because they did not performe their trust; he told them that if any disturbance should hereafter arise about what was done that should occasion the shedding of blood, he should suspect them to be rebellion and perjury, therefore and therefore came to them to looke to the peace.' *Tracts of S. in 16.*





christian, and saying 'that he could with as good a conscience goe to the Pope and his Cardinalls for their approbation as to them' (pp. 13-15). The Council of Officers, however, supported the Protector's Government, and presented a petition on behalf of liberty of conscience, which Parliament was then threatening to restrict (pp. 11, 13). At the end of December horse and foot regiments were quartered in Westminster and guns planted about Whitehall and St. James'; on the rumour of a plot to overthrow the Protectorate by aid of the army in Scotland (p. 16). But these precautions were more probably the result of the widespread plot for a Royalist insurrection which had long been in preparation. 'It was not thought fit to lett the blades goe on any longer who were att worke to have brought new troubles upon us,' and therefore at the beginning of January 1655 many of the chief plotters were arrested (p. 17). On January 22 Cromwell dissolved Parliament, asserting that 'under their shadow and thorrow theire Howse and its resolutions, bryers and thornes were grown up, even to the hazard of all,' meaning that their hostility had encouraged the designs of the Cavaliers and the Levellers. Of this speech the newsletters contain brief summaries (pp. 19, 20).

In spite of the many arrests made the Royalists persisted in their design. The rising was originally fixed for February. 'Yesterday,' says a letter dated February 13, 'they intended to have taken away the life of his Highnesse, this day to rise in all the westerne partes, to-morrow in all the northerne partes of the nation' (p. 22). Through the vigorous measures of the Government they were obliged to postpone the date to March 8 (p. 27); but though there were gatherings of men in arms near Nottingham, Newcastle, York, Shrewsbury, and elsewhere, it was at Salisbury alone that action followed.<sup>1</sup> On March 12 Sir Joseph Wagstaff and Colonel Penruddock with 200 or 300 horse seized the judges on circuit at Salisbury and proclaimed

<sup>1</sup> For a full account of this see 'Cromwell and the Insurrection of 1655' in the *English Historical Review*, 1888, p. 323; 1892, p. 313.



Charles II. On the night of March 11 the party was routed by Captain Croke at South Molton, and the insurrection came to an end (pp. 25-30). The newsletters contain many details about the trial and punishment of the prisoners (pp. 32-38).

In the summer of 1655 the Protector made a considerable reduction in the numbers of the standing army and a small reduction in its pay which it was estimated would lessen the cost of the army by 20,000*l.* per month (pp. 39, 46, 49). At the same time a new standing militia of horse was organised in all the counties of England, partly to supply the place of the regular troops disbanded, partly as a military police to prevent future insurrections. England was divided into eleven districts, and a major-general appointed to command the militia of each district. The necessary funds were provided by a tax of ten per cent. on the incomes of the Royalists (pp. 39, 42, 50). In August 1655 the officers of the new militia were feasted by the Protector at Whitehall (p. 47). On March 5, 1656, the Protector made a speech to the Aldermen and Common Council of London, setting forth the reasons for the establishment of the militia and the major-generals, and explaining the beneficial results of the institution. 'This way,' he said, 'the Lord hath owned by making more effectuall than was expected, and by receiving a good acceptance with those who of late stood at some distance with us' (p. 65).

In September 1656 the second Parliament of the Protectorate met. The newsletters give a summary of Cromwell's opening speech, and there is also a notice of one made by him to a meeting of officers a few days earlier (pp. 72, 73). About 120 republican members were excluded (pp. 73-75, 85). After their exclusion the war with Spain was approved, many of the Protector's ordinances confirmed, and great activity shown in legislation. 'The whole House,' it was asserted, 'were unanimous in carrying on the best things for the good of the nation both spirituall and temporall' (p. 76). This harmony was interrupted by the dis-



cussions on the case of James Nayler, and brought to an end of the excited debates over the bill for legalising the position of the major-generals (pp. 84-85).

Still greater divisions arose over the proposal to make the Protector king. The newsletters prove that this was no new suggestion. According to one it had been actually moved in the Parliament of 1654 (p. 16). It was rumoured in May 1655 that the making of a new Great Seal was to be immediately followed by the crowning of the Protector (pp. 35, 42). In August 1655 a printed petition was circulated in London, in the name of the freeholders of England, urging Cromwell to assume the crown under the title of King or Emperor; but the petition was suppressed by the Protector's Council (pp. 48, 51). The revival of Monarchy had been again suggested in Parliament in January 1657 (p. 57), and when on February 25 Alderman Luck formally presented the draft of a monarchical constitution to the House, it can have been no great surprise to politicians. A newsletter dated a fortnight earlier says that 'many citizens of London' had been laying wagers 'that we shall have suddenly an alteration of the present Government' (p. 22).

Thurloe assured Monk that the scheme originated with Parliament and not with the Protector: 'His Highness knew nothing of the particulars till they were brought into the House' (p. 90). Another writer, probably John Rushworth, prophesied that the proposal would be carried in spite of the opposition of the soldiers. The majority of the Parliament, he said, 'are so highly incensed against the arbitrary actings of the Major Generalls that they are greedy of any powers that will be ruled and limited by law' (p. 91). Thurloe was specially pleased by the revival of a Second House. 'Wee judge here that this House thus constituted will bee a great security and bullwarke to the honest interest . . . and will not bee soe uncertaine as the House of Commons, which depend upon the election of the people' (p. 95).



The army opposed the scheme from the beginning. At its first introduction all the Major-Generals voted against it (p. 91), and the officers expressed 'the fears and jealousies that lay upon them in relation to the Protector's alteration of his title' (p. 92). Two addresses were presented by the officers to Cromwell on the subject, and Cromwell 'was pleased to use such tender and pious discovery of his constant regard to his army and the antient cause of the honest people under his government, and gave such Christian assurance thereof that amounted to a *largo satisfaccion*' to the deputation (p. 96). The excitement in the army seemed to be allayed (p. 98).

Parliament passed one after another the Articles of the Petition and Advice, with less opposition than was expected (p. 97). Some of them met with general approval. 'This day,' says a letter of March 19, 'the House passed the clause for Liberty of Conscience, and indeed much more to satisfaction generally than as in the Instrument of Government.' At the end of March took place the offer of the crown to Cromwell. Reports of three of Cromwell's speeches in the conferences which followed are in Clarke's letter books—the speeches numbered VII, VIII, IX in Carlyle's collection. As they differ very little from the reports which are the basis of Carlyle's versions, it was deemed enough to collate them, and to set down the various readings which Clarke's reports supply (pp. 99-101, 103). There is also a copy of the speech of the Protector on May 25, accepting the Petition and Advice (appendix number 30 in Carlyle), which has been collated in the same way (p. 112). Cromwell refused the crown on May 8, after a new petition against kingship, urging Parliament to press the Protector no further, had been presented to the House (pp. 108-110). Of the rest of the proceedings of the session the newsletters give little information, nor do they supply much about the second session of the parliament, which began on January 23, 1657, or give a brief account of the opening of the session and of the Protector's speech (p. 132). Clarke's papers





however contain a report of the speech with which the Protector dissolved this parliament (speech XVIII in Carlyle). This is printed at length because it differs more than the others from Carlyle's version (p. 136). It supplies contemporary evidence for the tradition that when Cromwell closed his denunciation of the conduct of the House by calling on God to judge between his opponents and himself, many of the Commons answered by crying 'Amen' (p. 139).

One cause of this sudden dissolution was the deadlock caused by the refusal of the republican opposition, now triumphant in the Commons, to recognise the new House of Lords. Another was the imminent danger of an alliance between the opposition in Parliament and the malcontents in the army. A petition, intended to be presented by the republican party in London, was to formulate the programme of the military and civil opponents of the government (p. 180). The sudden dissolution frustrated this plan, and it was followed up by measures for the purgation of the army. Lambert, who had expressed his dissatisfaction with the new constitution, had been dismissed from all his commands in the previous July, though his pay had been for the present continued (pp. 113, 114, 119). Now in February 1658 Major Packer and five other officers commanding the Protector's own regiment of horse were cashiered for declaring 'their dislike of the present government,' after Cromwell himself had 'laboured to satisfy them' without success (p. 140). The officers in general, to whom, two days after the dissolution, the Protector 'spoke in a very large discourse of about two hours,' were more easy to convince, and declared that this speech 'gave a general satisfaction to them all' (p. 139). Over two hundred signed the address presented to Cromwell on March 27 (pp. 111, 115). In March and April there was much talk of a new Parliament, and of something to be done to secure 'a more absolute settlement than the Petition and Advice doth hold forth' (p. 115). This probably refers to a renewal of the attempt to convert the Protectorate into a monarchy, which was confidently expected. Every



little thing which could be construed as evidence of this intention was noticed and commented upon. When the Protector's son-in-law, Robert Rich, died, it was observed that 'His Highness mourned three daies in purple (as is used by persons of his quality)' (p. 112). In May 1657 a report that the Master of the Wardrobe was having made up 'the two capps of crimson and purple velvet, worn onely by princes,' is said to 'make the people take largely of kingship' (p. 159). Bordenux, the French ambassador, who was an acute observer of English politics, reported to his government in March 1657 that he saw more signs of a disposition to make Cromwell king than to overthrow his power (Guizot, '*Cromwell and the English Commonwealth*,' ii. 574, 586, 589, 596).

Among other subjects mentioned in the newsletters are the death and funeral of Blake (pp. 115, 118), the marriage of Skippon (pp. 115, 118), Fairfax's endeavours to obtain the release of his son-in-law, the Duke of Buckingham (pp. 123, 129), duels (p. 131), a celebrated trial (p. 125), and many miscellaneous items of London gossip. There are frequent references to the Protector's schemes for the reform of the law. 'The military party was strongly in their favour, though they 'much startled' the lawyers (pp. 61, 64, 76, 86). In a short speech to his second Parliament, which is not included in Carlyle's collection, the Protector dwelt with satisfaction on the many good laws they had made, 'the effect whereof the people of this Commonwealth will with comfort finde hereafter' (p. 83).

The letters throw little light on the Protector's ecclesiastical policy, though they notice incidents such as the sermons of Simpson, Sturgeson, Feake, and others against Cromwell (pp. 13, 51, 62, 146), the debates about Naylor's case (p. 81), the expulsion of Quakers from the army (p. 122), and John Lilburne's conversion to episcopalianism (p. 62). Cromwell's answer to the petitioners on behalf of John Lilburne is couched, apparently with approval (p. 53). An account of the 'Common Prayer Booke meetings' in London about



Christmas 1657 shows the extent and limits of the toleration allowed to Anglicans under the Protector's government (p. 130).

Among the Clarendon papers in the Bodleian there is a report of a short answer made by Cromwell on January 5, 1654, to an address presented by 'the ministers of the French church of London' which has escaped notice, and will serve to supplement the scanty information about ecclesiastical matters this volume supplies.

'The substance of his Highness's answer to us was :

'That he saw we were pleased to take notice of what he had formerly said to us, wherein he had declared his heart to us, and had said it indeed, and did say it still. That we should goe on in one way, and that it should be his joye to see we would doe, as we had said we should : to live in the love which is in Christ Jesus, and to honour our profession with a holy life (though for his part he knew no other wayes but we did see), for whatsoever our profession were, that is that would doe it, namely the power of godlinesse. He did exhort us then to goe on in doing soe, and promised us his Protection, and that he would be ready to serve us. That he did hope that God would grant him the grace to keep his Ark in these nations ; and desired our prayers for him that he might improve that authority which the Lord had given him for the good of God's people.'<sup>1</sup>

On the foreign and colonial policy of the Protector the newsletters themselves contain little of importance. But other letters among these papers, and the documents added in the Appendix, contain information of value.

In 1653 when Cromwell expelled the Long Parliament the war with the Dutch was still in progress, and there are occasional references to captures of Dutch ships, the movements of the English fleet, and the peace negotiations (pp. 2, 3, 5, 7, 8, 9). It seemed probable that English alliance with Spain would take up the cause of Condé and the Huguenots of Bordeaux. Lieutenant

<sup>1</sup> *Clarendon MSS.* xlvii. 268.



Colonel Sexby had been sent to the south of France by the Council of State about the end of 1653 to enquire into the condition of the country and the temper of the people 'in order to prevent danger and create an interest.' He returned to England about the end of 1653, and early in 1654 presented to the newly made Protector the scheme printed in Appendix A (p. 197). It proposed that England should hit upon in the French civil war by hiring our ships and men to the Spaniards. Six thousand foot and fifteen hundred horse, paid by Spain, were to be landed in the south of France to secure Rochelle and other ports. Cromwell seriously considered the project. In October 1653 he had sent Joachim Hane, a German engineer employed in the English army in Scotland, to enquire into the condition of Rochelle and other fortified places and ports. Hane's narrative, which is among the Clarke Papers, has been printed, but relates almost entirely to his personal adventures.<sup>1</sup> By the summer of 1654 Cromwell had made up his mind to have nothing to do with Sexby's scheme, and at the end of 1654 a treaty between France and England was on the point of conclusion. Then, however, it was broken off, and when the royalist insurrection of March 1655 took place the French seemed disposed to take advantage of it to attack England (pp. 21, 23, 29-35, 37). On May 7, 1655, the French ambassador came to take leave of the Protector, 'and yet that afternoon the peace was revived,' and in October following the long delayed treaty was concluded (pp. 38, 61).

In 1655 a Swedish ambassador came to England to negotiate an alliance between the Protector and Charles Gustavus of Sweden. The newsletters describe the quarrel about precedence which took place at his reception between the Spanish and French ambassadors, and the rumour that 20,000 English soldiers were to be sent to the support of the Swedes (pp. 46, 49). Nothing for the present came

<sup>1</sup> *Journal de Joachim Hane, Ingénieur de l'Armée Française, pendant son Voyage en Angleterre, en France, et en Espagne, de Novembre 1653 à Février 1654*. Edited by C. H. Firth. (B. H.P. 37. 4.) Oxford 1890.





of these negotiations. The Protector about the end of the year also thought of intervening in the war which had broken out in Switzerland between the Protestant and the Catholic cantons. Cromwell was zealous for the cause of the Protestants. 'Their want is monie' wrote Thurloe to Monck, 'which they pray a supply of from his Highnesse, who will tryne himself upon this occasion, although itt can ill be spared. All that concerne the profession of religion is att stake in this warre in these parts' (p. 65).

Cromwell was prevented from giving the Swiss the pecuniary assistance they asked by the cost of the war with Spain which commenced in October 1655. It was the natural consequence of his attack on Hispaniola and the conquest of Jamaica. An account of 'the grounds of advertizinge the designe of attemptinge the Kinge of Spaine in the West Indies' and a very curious report of a debate in the Protector's Council on the subject are printed in Appendix B (p. 264). Both are derived from the papers of Edward Montagu, in the possession of the Earl of Sandwich. The Society is indebted to the Earl of Sandwich for allowing them to be copied, and to Dr. Gardiner for transcribing them. At the conclusion of the peace with the Dutch in the spring of 1654, the Protector found himself with 'a hundred and sixty sail of brave ships well appointed swimming at sea.' It seemed to him better and cheaper to employ them in some enterprise which would keep up the reputation acquired by the late war, and 'improve it to some good' rather than to lay up the ships (p. 207). The arguments which led to the employment of this fleet against Spain instead of France are stated in Montagu's first paper to very much the same effect as in Thurloe's account of the Protector's foreign policy. 'The attempt upon France,' recommended by Spain, 'was apprehended difficult and unprofitable, the Spaniard's aims beinge but to sett us two together by the cares.' On the other hand 'the attemptinge the Spaniard' was held profitable and easy, and also as advantageous to the Protestant cause as the weakening of France would be detrimental (p. 203). The Protector and his councillors



exaggerated the facility with which the Spanish possessions in America might be conquered and the Plate fleet intercepted (p. 204). The moment seemed to them propitious for the attempt because the Spaniards were 'engaged in a warr with France, and very weake everywhere at present.' Another argument was that 'the worke is like to be more acceptable to the people of all sorts and the Parliament than any can be.' But though the war was expected to be popular, it was as well to begin it when Parliament was not sitting. 'If this opportunity be omitted, it is to be doubted whether we shall ever be soe well fitted for it, or get the consent of a Parliament to doe it.' Moreover it was very possible that the attack would not lead to a war with Spain in Europe. 'Notwithstandinge our warr with the Spaniard in America, it is possible, if not reasonable to expect that wee may have peace and trade in Europe; for his necessities of our trade will require it, but especially his interest in Flanders which he hath no way to relieve with forces or monyes but through our Chamell, which if hee have warr in Europe he will certainly be debarred of' (p. 205). In the Protector's Council the chief opponent of the proposed West Indian expedition was Major-General Lambert. Apart from the cost and the difficulty of the enterprise, both of which he held to be underestimated, he urged that the reform of the law, the settlement of Ireland, and home affairs in general demanded all the attention of the Government. To this Cromwell replied that God had brought them where they were 'to consider the worke wee may doe in the world as well as at home'; and that to adjourn the attempt until the Government had a surplus meant putting it off for ever. 'It was told us,' he concluded, 'that this designe would cost little more than laying by the shippes, and that with hope of greater profit' (p. 207).

The expedition under the command of Penn and Venables sailed for the West Indies in December 1654. 'The designe,' says an intercepted letter, 'is secrett, knowne to the designer onely, whoe saith if hee thought his shirt knew it hee would burne it'



(p. 12). In March 1655 its safe arrival at Barbadoes was known in England (pp. 29, 31); at the end of June news came of the burning at Hispaniola, and of the capture of its chief city without opposition (pp. 44, 46, 48); in August the taking of Jamaica was announced and the truth about the disastrous defeat at Hispaniola gradually became known (pp. 47-7). A narrative of the expedition by an officer engaged in it, which contains many new details, is printed on pp. 51-60. The author is evidently of opinion that if the attack upon the city of San Domingo, attempted on April 17, had been persisted in, the city might have been captured. He describes the murmuring of the old soldiers in his regiment when they received the General's orders to retreat, and were forced to attend in their wounded comrades (p. 56). The regiment in question was Colonel Richard Porteseuc's, in which the author of the narrative was then a captain.<sup>1</sup>

Penn and Venables returned to England about the beginning of September 1655 and were both sent to the Tower (pp. 51-2). A Spanish ambassador, the Marquis de Leyde, had been negotiating in England since April 1655, but now asked for his passports (pp. 54-5, 58-9, 13, 53, 60), and Spain seized all English ships and merchants in its ports (pp. 52, 60). The breach was complete.

When the merchants complained of these seizures, the Protector answered that he would reimburse Jamaica with an additional army, and that he was confident they'dy to repair their losses twentyfold, which gave great satisfaction (p. 52). To these reinforcements there are several references in these letters. A regiment under Colonel Humphreys was sent in June 1655 (pp. 40, 42, 43). Lieutenant-

<sup>1</sup> The MS. contains no indication of the author-ship of the narrative, but internal evidence shows that the author was a captain in Porteseuc's regiment when Hispaniola was attacked. At first sight the narrative looks like a letter from Jamaica, but on closer examination it seems rather as if it were a statement made by some officer in England on his return from Jamaica. It so it may be conjectured that its author was Thomas Venables. White was originally a captain in the regiment, became its major May 15, 1655, after the landing in Jamaica, and he had leave to return to England on June 16. See also his *Relation, Col. State Papers, 1655-6*, p. 61.



General William Brayne and two other regiments followed in 1656 (p. 86), but two hundred of Brayne's regiment and many officers were shipwrecked off the coast of Iceland (p. 77).<sup>1</sup>

The Protector's second parliament approved of the war with Spain, but showed some reluctance to sanction the increased taxation it necessitated. The war was estimated to cost a million a year, and the military party who were extremely zealous against the Spaniards, grumbled that Spain and Flanders could not be taken with a bare vote (pp. 75, 76, 81, 82, 85).

In March 1657 the Protector concluded an alliance with France, by which an auxiliary force of 6,000 English soldiers was to co-operate in the conquest of Flanders. The newsletters mention the raising of these troops, but the nature of their employment was at first kept a secret (pp. 95, 106, 107). The English auxiliaries consisted of six regiments of a thousand men each, levied for the purpose. Of these regiments the colonels were Sir John Reynolds, commander of the whole force, Major-General Thomas Morgan, his second in command, and Colonels Roger Alsop, Henry Lillingstone, Samuel Clarke, and Brice Cochrane. Morgan had previously served as Monck's second in command in Scotland. His letters to Monck, together with the letters of two other officers who had served under Monck, give an excellent account of the campaign (pp. 110, 116, 131, 169). One of these officers was probably Joachim Haue, the engineer employed to fortify Mardyke (pp. 120, 127, 129). Another was Richard Hughes, once Monck's lieutenant ('Scotland and the Protectorate,' pp. 100, 167), and during the campaign in Flanders lieutenant-colonel of Sir Brice Cochrane's regiment (pp. 124, 148, 150, 151, 159). The first service of the English contingent was at the siege of St. Venant, where

<sup>1</sup> It was originally intended to print the narrative of General Venables himself and several other accounts of the Jamaica expedition in the Appendix to this volume. These are the accounts printed in the Appendix referred to in the footnote to p. 60. But so recently it was judged better to print all these narratives in a separate volume as they proved much longer than had been expected.





they distinguished themselves by the courage with which they stormed the outworks of the town. 'Marshall Turenne with most of the nobility in the army have had a high respect for us ever since,' writes Morgan (p. 117). Mardyke was captured in September 1657, and immediately handed over to an English garrison. The fort was weak, its outworks ruinous, and the whole place insufficient to afford proper accommodation for the troops necessary to hold it (pp. 120, 126). An attempt of the Spaniards to retake it by surprise was successfully repulsed (pp. 122, 124), but the garrison had very heavily from sickness and hardships. 'We have about 2,000 men,' says a letter, 'but not accommodation for 600 of them; hence the shifts we make for lodgings are very hard and unwholesome, leading to the destruction of many every day.' The rest of the English contingent suffered almost as much. 'Our soldiers that lie up and down in the French quarters sicken and dye every day for want of good accommodation, soe that by the next spring they will bee reduced to a very small number, if they hold on as they doe' (pp. 122, 123, 125, 128). According to Morgan the 6,000 were reduced to 3,000 by February 1658 (p. 135). But in the spring a large number of recruits were sent over, and also the greater part of the regiments of Colonel Salmon and Colonel Giddens (pp. 119, 129, 149, 151, 152, 158). In May 1658 Turenne laid siege to Dunkirk, and the English regiments again distinguished themselves by the energy with which they attacked the outworks, carried on their approaches, and repulsed the sallies of the garrison. 'The English soldiers,' writes Hughes, 'behaving themselves very handsomely, have gained a generall applause from all the grandees of the army; the French horse, who formerly hated us, have become very loving and civill, and had rather engage with us than with their owne fote' (p. 154). They lost many men in unsuccessful attempts to storm the counterscarp (p. 158).

In June 1658 Condé and Don John with 16,000 or 18,000 men came to raise the siege, and the battle of the Dunes took place on Friday, June 11<sup>th</sup>. There are two excellent accounts of the battle



in these papers: one by Colonel Drummond, the other by Lieut.-Colonel Hughes. Lockhart's regiment particularly distinguished itself. 'Without vanitie,' wrote Drummond, 'that regiment has done what I have never seene done before, for they charged and beate a Spanish regiment off a hill more steepe than any ascent of a breach that I have seene' (p. 151). Hughes describes this sandhill, on which the Spanish right was stationed, as 'a great hill naturally fortified,' and says, 'our men on hands and knees kept up the hill, and gave the enemies foot two good volleys, and with our pikes forced them to retreate' (p. 157). Both agreed that if the French horse had pursued with sufficient vigour, very few of the Spanish army would have escaped. As it was, the number of prisoners taken was nearly 3,000, and the Spanish infantry were mostly cut to pieces. Drummond received a mortal wound the day after the battle, while Hughes was killed about a month later, so that for the rest of the campaign there are only two brief letters from Morgan and Thurloe (pp. 160, 163).

Three months after the battle of the Dunes Cromwell died. The Protector had been ill in August 1655 and in January 1656 (pp. 51, 63). In August 1658, after the death of his daughter Mrs. Claypole, he was again 'visited with a fit of sickness,' described as 'a great distemper' too much like the illness he had in Scotland in the spring of 1651. 'Three days agoe,' says a letter dated August 11, 'wee had some doubts of his recovery . . . but now hee is pretty well recovered, and upon the consideration of his mortality will speedily resolve of something of settlement.' On the 28th the renewal of the Protector's illness is mentioned; on September 2 it is said that there is good hope of his recovery (p. 161). On September 3, 'about three o'clock in the afternoon,' says a letter dated September 4, 'Death overcame his Highnesse (who overcame thousands upon that day of the month in the yeares 1650 and 1651).' Four or five hours later Richard Cromwell was proclaimed Protector, the newswriter asserting that he had been nominated in writing by his father, which was no doubt



the accredited report, though according to Thurloe the paper could not be found (p. 162). For a moment after the Protector's death 'things looked very cloudely,' the Anabaptists 'spoke words very bold,' especially Mr. Feale, and 'a gret many of the Longe Parliament men flocked to towne, which bred some jealousy.' But the immediate proclamation of Richard prevented any disturbance, and the new ruler was quietly accepted (*ibid.*). 'It is a mercy worth all good men's observation to see all men thankfull in this change' (p. 163).

The danger to Richard's rule lay in the discontent of some of the officers and the ambition of others. The army presented a congratulatory address to Richard on September 18 (p. 161), but early in October a dangerous petition was in circulation asking that Fleetwood should be made commander-in-chief, though it was dis-countenanced by Fleetwood himself (p. 165). During October and November the officers in London met regularly every Friday to pray and expound places of Scripture. 'A very eminent spirit of prayer appeared in the officers,' says an account of one meeting, but they could not keep off politics, and in another 'the language flew high, and tended as some said to division' (pp. 166-168). Complaints were made of alterations in the army 'as if good men were put out and worse put in' (p. 169). On this the young Protector, who had made one speech to the officers about a month earlier, called them together again and made another, in which he complained of undeserved 'jealousies,' and protested his carefulness to protect 'the godly of the nation.' 'As they had consented in the proclayning of him Protector, so he hoped they would assist him in the government, for he stood much in need of their advice, being young and not fitted for so great a work.' The officers, 'except some few of the inferior sort,' we are told, 'seemed to be much affected with what my Lord said' (p. 169). This stayed the agitation for a time, and when, in December, some troopers got up a petition for an increase of their pay, they were cashied by a court-martial (p. 170). Richard, it is evident, did his best to



ingratiate himself with the army. He gave all the foot soldiers about London 'new red coats trimmed with black' for the funeral of the late Protector, 'which makes them not a little joyfull in his favour; and though the captains and other superior officers have no mourning given them, yet his Highness hath promised that which shall be of equall value therein to' (p. 168). Moreover, early in January 1659, 'upon invitation from his Highness all the officers of the army (not under the degree of a captain) received a royall treatment at Whitehall' (p. 173).

In December elections took place for a new parliament, and the newsletters contain a few details about contested elections in different places (pp. 172-174). Several eminent republicans were elected, 'yet they are conceived to be of no greater advantage than any other, because in all the debates for or against kingship, there was not one proselite or one disciple gained by what was argued by the wisest of men on both sides' (p. 173). It was estimated that there would be two to one in favour of government by a Protector (p. 177). Parliament met on January 27, 1659, and the Protector's speech at its opening gained him very great credit. He 'spake to both Houses with such a grace and presence, and with such oratory and steadinesse, without the least interruption and so pertinently to the present occasion, as it was beyond all expectation' (p. 176). So far as bearing and externals went it is perfectly evident from this and from other contemporary evidence that Richard made a very presentable sovereign, and that the rusticity and clownishness attributed to him are royalist fictions. There is a letter from William Hooke to John Winthrop in the publications of the Massachusetts Historical Society (Fourth Series, vii, 591), which gives a good sketch of his character, and confirms this view.

Speaking of Oliver's death, Hooke writes:

'His eldest sonne succeedeth him, being chosen by the Councill the day following his father's death, whereof he had no expectation. I have heard him say, he had thought to have lived at a country





gentleman, and that his father had not employed him in such a way, as to prepare him for such employment; which, he thought, he did designedly. I suppose his meaning was, lest it should have been apprehended, he had prepared and appointed him for such a place; the burden whereof I have severall times heard him complayning under since his coming to the government, the weighty occasions whereof, with continuall oppressing cares, had drunk up his father's spirits, in whose body very little blood was found when he was opened: the greatest defect visible was in his heart, which was flaccid and shrunk together; yet he was one that could beere much without complayning, as one of a strong constitution of brayne (as appeared when he was di-sected) and likewise of body. His son seemeth to be of another frame, more soft and tender, and penetrable with easer cares by much, yet he is of a sweete countenance, vivacious, and candid, as is the whole frame of his spirit, onely, naturally, inclined to choler. His reception of multitudes of addresses, from Townes, Cities and Countyes, doth declare, among severall other indiciums, more of ability in him, then could ordinarily, have beene expected from him. He spake also with generall acceptacion and applause, when he made his speech before the Parliament, even farr beyond the Lord Fynes.

The problems before the young Protector's government were many and serious. Abroad there was the question of the control of the Sound, for which Sweden and Denmark were contending. The Dutch supported the Danes. The English government, which favoured the Swedes, was attempting in conjunction with France to mediate a peace between the kings of Denmark and Sweden, and prepared to back its diplomacy by a fleet. To this and to the progress of the northern war the newsletters contain frequent references (pp. 166, 172, 183, 195). More valuable are the letters of George Downing from the Hague, describing the state of feeling in Holland, where a new war with England seemed imminent. The Dutch, according to Downing, thought that things would never be well



'till they have a little brought downe the courage of the English' (p. 170). They were fitting out ships and imposing fresh taxes, while the English Parliament was apathetic, or too impatient of taxation to make the necessary preparations. 'I know not anything so much talked of at this time as the Parliament at London, and its judged twenty to one odd, that the issue of it will be nothing but janglings about questions in the ayre' (pp. 175, 177). Downing also condemned in the strongest terms the economic policy of England, and demanded sweeping reductions in the customs tariff, which he termed 'an impassable barr to trade' (*ibid.*).

In domestic affairs the chief questions were the recognition of the new ruler (pp. 179, 181), the right of the Scottish and Irish representatives to sit in the House of Commons (pp. 176, 185, 186), and the authority of the House of Lords (pp. 179, 181, 183, 185, 188). A petition for the restoration of a parliamentary republic which was largely signed about London was presented to the House of Commons on February 15: it was identical with the petition whose presentation the late Protector had prevented by dissolving parliament so suddenly in February 1658, but it appears to have fallen rather flat (pp. 180, 182). More excitement was caused by the release of Major-General Overton and his triumphant entry into London, which reminded people of the similar re-entry of Prynne and his fellow-sufferers in 1640 (p. 184). In February the agitation in the army began again, and a committee of officers was appointed to draw up a petition to Parliament (p. 182). In April a general meeting of all officers in or near London took place, and the petition was agreed upon (pp. 187, 189). Parliament took alarm, and on April 18 Richard ordered the general council of officers to be dissolved, and all officers to repair to their commands (p. 191). A complete breach between the Protector and the army followed. On the night of Thursday, April 21, Richard ordered various regiments to march to Whitehall 'for the preservation of his person,' but they preferred to obey the orders of Fleetwood rather than those of the Protector (p. 193). Even his own regiment



deserted him, and he was left with only his lifeguard and about three companies of foot and two troops of horse (p. 213). He could do nothing but submit, and the next day he dissolved Parliament as the army required. Fleetwood, in a very disingenuous letter to March, gives a brief account of this revolution, and repudiates the idea that the army was responsible for the dissolution. 'I beleive some will very evilly represent us in this action, as if wee had forced the Parliament, though his Highnesse by his owne authority did dissolve them, in which the army did stand by his Highnesse' (p. 191). A week after the dissolution Lambert and other officers whom the late Protector had cashiered were received back into the army, and the council of officers was considering whether to recall the Long Parliament or to set up a new government (pp. 195, 196).

In Appendix C there is a letter giving an account of the proceedings which led to the fall of Richard Cromwell as they appeared to a sympathiser with the army. Nehemiah Bourne, its author, lays claim to special knowledge of what went on in the councils of the army (pp. 212-213). He affirms positively that the movement originated with 'the generality of the officers of the army' instigated by the republican party outside it, not with the superior officers (p. 211); and that after the dissolution of Parliament 'all indeavours were made by the principal officers in the armie to peace and mend up that crudit government,' and maintain the Protectorate (p. 213). But 'the meaner sorte of the officers, together with the honest people that flocked in to them,' insisted on the restoration of the Long Parliament (p. 214). Bourne's narrative also shows that the army fully believed that many of the members of parliament who supported Richard were in reality royalists, and that Richard, 'who they would have made see much haste to dress and set on horsebacke, was but to warme the saddle for another whom they better loved and liked,' *i.e.* Charles II. (p. 211). For this very curious and valuable letter the Society is indebted to the kindness of Mr. W. W. Dodge of Cambridge, Massachusetts.



The caricature of Richard Cromwell, which forms a frontispiece to this volume, is in the possession of Worcester College, and is bound up with a number of folio pamphlets relating to the period collected by William Clarke. The original is coloured.

In this volume, as in the two earlier ones, the contractions of the original documents have been extended, and the punctuation altered where it seemed necessary. A fourth volume, containing newsletters written in 1659, and a number of papers relating to the movements of General Monck and his march into England, will complete the series. The index is reserved for volume IV.

G. H. FIRTH.

October 23, 1899.





# THE CLARKE PAPERS

## Newsletters written in 1653<sup>1</sup>

15. *Letter*, April 23, 1653.<sup>2</sup>—His Excellency and severall officers of the army treading on the Tuesday before with many of the best Members of Parliament about putting the government of the nation into some honest and able persons till a new representative should bee chosen (for that the bill resolved to bee carried on by Parliament was not for dissolving this Parliament but recruiting it with such as probably would bee dissaffected, neuters, lawyers, or the like, which would destroy the publique interest of the nation), the Members promised to consider and give in their judgements thereof the next day, and in the interim would endeavour to keepe the bill from passing. But this being told to most of the Members, the House (in the Generall's absence) called the next morning for the bill, and before his Excellency could come had neere past itt (contrary to promise as was then told to them), whereupon after something said by the Generall, Captain Scott marched into the House with parte of his companie, and tooke the Speaker's mace, and himself refusing to come out of the chaire was (modestly) pulled out by a Member of Parliament and army: and soe the

<sup>1</sup> MSS. A. 9. 2. 16. The 1653 are all from vol. 200, of the Clarke MSS, in Worcester College Library.

<sup>2</sup> Printed in the *English Historical Review* for July 1896, with other documents relating to the Expulsion of the Long Parliament.

<sup>3</sup> Vol. 141.



Members walk't out, and the Parliament was dissolved with a little noyse as can bee imagined: Alderman Allen was a little while under confinement for some words, but noe other Member. They are generally displeas'd, unlesse some few of them who (itt's thought) will bee made use of for the next Governours, none being yet chosen. They are to bee 21 in all (whereof 3 only to bee of the army, vizt. the Lord Generall, Major Generall Lambert, and Lieutenant Generall Fleetwood). Those of the Parliament that are already come in are, Major Salway, Colonel Bennett, and Mr. Walter Strickland. The people are very calme and pleasant, expecting great and good thinges to bee speedily done for the nation. The forraigne Ambassadors will still continue their addresses to those impow'r'd from the army, where Commissary Generall Whalley sits in the chaire. There are 100 saile of shippes ready to goe forth, which will bee as gallant a flecte (with those already out) as ever England sett forth.

- 13b. *Westminster, April 26, 1653.* Yesterday the Lord Generall sent his Secretary to the Lord Maior and the rest of the Justices att the Sessions, desiring none condemned for theft or any other crime (save only for murther) may att present bee executed, wheruppon the Court reprieved them till further order.<sup>1</sup> The persons intended to governe for some time are nott yet chosen, only there sits severall of the late Members, vizt. Major Salway, Mr. Cary, Colonel Stapley, Sir Gilbert Pickering, Mr. Strickland, and others, advising and consulting about settling the affaires of the nation; severall more (itt's thought) will speedily bee added to them. Major Generall Lambert, Major General Harrison, and severall officers of the army sitt likewise daily about the affaires of the armie. The scales were yesterday opened and made use of in preparacion to this next terme, for most of the Judges (itt's said) are satisfied to set. Colonel Grosvenor is coming to Scotland to give the ground of the late proceedings. Lieutenant Colonel White is intended to Ireland upon the same account. Major

<sup>1</sup> See Gardiner, *History of the Commonwealth and Protectorate*, ii. 217.



Generall Disbrowe hath refused the command of Scotland, and Commissary Generall Whalley is now conceived to bee the man. Sir Henry Vane is discontentedly or politiquely gone into the countrey. Sir Arthur Heslerigge, Lord Bradshaw, St. John, and all the grantees are much troubled at this revolution.

*Westminster, April 30, 1653.*—An answer came this weeke from the States General to the letter of the late Parliament, wherein he takes notice of the Parliament's inclination to unity and peace, which they likewise desire, and in order thereunto propose that a convenient tyme and place may be appointed for Commissioners on both sides to treat. This lettre was directed to the Parliament, but opened by the army, wher it's presumed are inclinable to an accommodation if the termes be safe. The late Speaker sent this lettre to Halberdaghers' Hall, and subscribed himselfe 'William Lenthall Speaker.' The Lord Bradshaw likewise at the Court of Articles openly blamed a Councell for pleading in the name of the late Parliament, saying that the Parliament was not dissolv'd though under force. Most of the Judges sits and acts upon this account (the termes being as full as ever), though the House of Peeres was never yet denied by them to be dissolved upon the like score, being a parte of this Parliament, which they say cannot be dissolv'd unlesse by their owne consents. There are 68 Swedish ships come and a party, seemingly fore'd in by a parte of our fleet, laden with pitch, tarre, cordage &c. which our State will fully paie them for. A scandalous ballade was this weeke sung generally through London, and bought by most, the benthen whereof was 12 Parliament men for a penny. His Excellencie desir'd the Lord Maior to suppress it, which he did accordingly, and hath since imprisoned the printer.<sup>1</sup> The old Petitioner petitioned his Excellencie to be continued in his employment. The petition and whole busines of post lettres is referred to Major Generall Lambert and Major Generall Desborow.

L. 37.

<sup>1</sup> Related in *Thomas Wright's Political Ballads, Published during the Commonwealth 1649-1659*, p. 129.



His Excellencie, Major Generall Lambert, Mr. Strickland, Major Generall Harrison, Sir Guilbert Pickering, Colonel Stapley, Mr. Cary, Colonel Sydenham, Colonel Bennet, and Major Salway continue sitting as a Councill till the Governours be chosen (which wilbe within 5 or 6 daies longer), and have appointed two Committees to examine the abuses of the Fleete prison and treasurers at My House and report. The fleet consisting of 190 sayle are joyned in the Downes. The Committee for inspeccion and the Committee for the army sit and act still.

38b. *Westminster, April 30.*—The management of the Governement is now resolved to bee by a Samedrim or 70 of the best men that can bee thought of through England, who are already pitch't upon, and wee shall shortly see their names in a paper to bee printed for like satisfaction of the nation.<sup>1</sup> These shall have the supreme authority, and bee called Custodes libertatis Reipublice Anglicanae. Noe professed lawyer is to bee of the number, nor must any Member of this optimaey hold any beneficiall office of the Commonwealth. If any of the army bee chosen wee heare they must lay downe their commissions, but whether they shall see continue time will discover. 4 Scotchmen are to bee of the aforesaid number to represent their nation. These are nott to exceede 2 yeares in their sitting. And att the period of time they are to choose other 70 to succcede them, and see on forwards, unlesse they shall judge this nation capable of their former government by Parliaments.

f. 42. *Westminster, May 7, 1653.*—The Councell of State hath this weeke nominated 2 Committees consisting for the most parte of the officers of the army, the one to consider and examine the accounts of the nation, and how the vast treasure thereof hath bin expended, and the other a Committee of Irish and Scottish affaires, and to manage the affaires of the nation. They likewise ordered, that the Deputies of Scotland residing heere should have notice given them of their intencions speedily to renew the power of, and give further time to, the Commissioners of Administration of justice

<sup>1</sup> Compare Ludlow's *Memoirs*, i. 358, ed. 1891.





in Scotland to act, and if they had anythinge before to offer concerning that businesse they might bee heard. The Committee of the army consisting of officers have ordered a letter to bee sent to the forces in Ireland and Scotland of the grounds of this late revolution. It is likewise intended to bee sent to all garrisons in England. They proceeded in nominating persons in the severall counties to sitt as a Councell, and are in hand with the draught of the large Declaration. Mr. Strickland is sett downe for Yorkshire, Captain Howard for Cumberland, Colonel Fenwick for Northumberland, and soe others for other counties. About 300 Dutch merchants shippes going round by Scotland homeward, 6 of them nott good sailers very richly laden were taken by one of our private men of warre. Our fleet consisting of 112 sayle are layd to the Texell to intercept this fleet, where the Dutch have 70 men of warre to receive them; wee expect daily to heare of an engagement. A Messenger is now come that tells us the Dutch fleet is fled unto and block't uppe in the Texell, and that we have taken 50 of their dogger boats.

*Westminster, May 11, 1653.*—The Councell of State have this week appointed Lieutenant Colonel Kelsay, Captain Deane, Mr. Jackson, Treasurers to the Commissioners of excise, and 2 more citizens committed to consider how all the treasury of this Commonwealth may bee managed for the best advantage thereof. They likewise sent for all the Trustees for sale of Delinquents' lands, Bishops', Bishops' and Chapters', and crowne lands, to give an account what monies remayne in the Treasuries. They have likewise consider'd of selling and disposing of the lands in Ireland. 4 thieves who lately rob'd the Committee of estates treasure came yesterday to rob Mr. Scotts' chamber (a late Member of Parliament), and being betrayed were apprehended about 9 in the morning, and by the Councell committed. 3 Commissioners are come from Burgh, and have applyed themselves yesterday to his Excellency, their business is nott yett knowne. Captain Belloe is with his fleet come into the Downes, hee hath brought in besides his fleet



4 shippes, one of which proves prize. Thursday last lettres came from the Generalls that they wanted a dayes sayle from the Dutch fleet, but were in great hopes to overtake them. His Excellency and severall officers of the army began this day to consider of 70 persons to bee elected to sitt as Counsell till a Representative bee cho-en, who shall elect them, and what the qualifications shall bee made concerning their election.

f. 56b. *Hestmaste, May 21, 1653.* — Wednesday the Lord Maior brought downe his Excellencies picture to him, which hee tooke off the Exchange, over which was written, God save the Kinge. The same day the souldiers with a civill officer went into the Temple, and served an execution uppon a gentleman for debt, and brought him out of that priviledg'd place. Generall Blake went this day towards Plymouth with parte of his 40 men of warre, who are ready to goe out with him.

Alderman Andrewes presented a petition to his Excellency subscribed by himself and 10 Aldermen with some others: Alderman Estwick made a large speech att the delivery of it, which was disrelished by the Generall. The substance of the petition was, that the late Parliament might sitt againe, and that they might chuse a new representative according to the ancient fundamentall lawes of the nation. The Generall told them hee tooke itt ill that they should goe about to obstruct the proceedings for the good of the people, that himself and those about him (turning to the officers) would make good what was done with their bloods &c. This answer not satisfying them they went to the Councell of State with another petition, where they had much more sniffling but went away free men. The stronger guards are heeruppon kept about the cittie, and such as subscribed the petition removed from their publique imployment, and their salaries converted to a generall use. Colonel Thompson is disabled from being a Commissioner of the Navy and Customes, Alderman Allen and Mr. Dennis Bond to bee noe longer of the Committee for inspection of treasuries (and Colonel Rich and Colonel Bennett in their roomes), nor Mr. Win-



lowe and Mr. Waring of the committee att Goldsmiths Hall, and the Clarke of the ordinance of the Tower acted [outed?] upon that account. Colonel Pride is chosen one of the Representors for the city of London, but Major Generall Lambert, Comissary Generall Whalley, Colonel Twisleton, and other officers of the army, being like to bee chosen, his Excellency desir'd the Councell to forbear them, in regard that those that are soe chosen are to lay downe their commands in the army.

The Zealanders having intercepted letters of the Jesuites intimating some designe against them, sent 12 Messengers to the States of Holland to presse them to a peace with England. The Lorrainers had kill'd many men upon the borders of Holland, but by order from the Kinge of Spaine were recalled.

The Lord of Arundell of Warder and the Lord Shandoys were indicted at sessions, and found guilty of manslaughter, and had sentence to bee burn't in the hand (a strange doome for Noblemen). The Cavalcere upon whose oath the Lord Craven's estate was sequestred, was indicted for perjury att the Upper Bench, and found guilty therof: for which hee is to stand in the pillory.

*Westminster, May 28, 1653.*—Wednesday last the Messenger L. 60. of the Councell of State that went with their last messag to the Stats of Holland returned with this answer, that they would send answer by Messenger of their owne, whome hee heard would bee 2 Ambassadors. This day Vantrump came into Dover roade with his fleete, having before convayed home all the fleete of Merchants, discharged many cannons against the towne of Dover, whereby some howses were prejudiced, but noe persons slaine. They are from thence gon up to the coast of France, but where our fleete is wee heare noe accompt at present. The Councell of State hath this weeke spent much time in debate of the Declaration for continuing the old Commissioners for assessments in the severall counties and the present tax upon the nacion for 3 moneths longer, this was twice read and committed. The Councell was informed that Mr. Russell, whoe signed the petition of severall cittizens for



recalling the late Parliament, did continue to sit and act as one of the Councell of Haberdashers Hall, notwithstanding that vote to the contrary, they ordered the said vote to bee sent to him, and that [he] upon his penalty forebare to sit or act there longer. Mr. Smith, one of the councell of the navie, whoe declared his dislike of the said petition when hee signed it, and since to the Councell, is by vote restored to his said imployment. Thirsday the Councell named a comittee to consider of disposing the places that were vacant upon that petition; they considered how the receipt of the custome and excize may be managed by and brought into office. This day letters came from Dover that the Dutch were sayled up towards the Goodwyns, and that they bent homewards. This weeke his Excellencie and officers have sat close in choosing the persons to sit in the next Representative; it will bee a busines of more time then was at first conceived.

f. 81b.

*Westminster, July 5. 1653.*—The 1th instant his Excellency mett with the Members that were summoned by his Lordshippe to appeare then att the Courc ll Chamber, and declared to them the reasons why hee dissolved the late Parliament and summoned them to succeed them, delivering the power of the 3 nations into their hands; for which purpose hee had signed and sealed an instrument in writeing by advice of his councell of officers, declaring their time of sitting to continue till the third of November 1654, and that they should issue out their writtes three monthes before their dissolucion for conveying the like number to succede them, and this to continue till the people bee capable of electing their owne representative; and for the Councell of State, he had appointed them for dispatch of present and urgent affaires till they should thinke fitt to alter them. His Lordshippe concluded with a good, pertinent admonition, and then the Members summoned (which were neere the compleate number) adjourned till the next day att 8 of clocke to the late Parliament house, where they kept a day of humiliation for a blessing upon their meeteing, not any Minister speakeing before them (as was proposed) only themselves; amongst





the rest was Mr. Squibb and Samuel Moyer. They have chosen the Lord Generall, Lambert, Harrison, Thomlinson &c. who were of the Councell of State, to be Members of Parliament, they appointed Mr. Rowse to be Speaker for a month, and Mr. Seobell their clarke. Our fleet att present is off the coast of Holland to take in victualls, but in 3 days will in againe. I have inclosed a list of shipes latly taken by them.

*Westminster, December 11, 1653.--A Relation of the Dissolu- t. 151.*  
*tion of the late Parliament with the manner and circumstances thereof, and the establishment of another power to carry on the affaires of this Commonwealth.*

Yesterday wee had another turne in the House they having dissolved themselves, and because various reports may goe, I shall give a hinte of the manner according to my best intelligence.

There were in the House two parties, one for the lawes, ministry, tithes, and the other against them, this latter partie had on Satterday last voted against the other and carried it, in a business wherein they were indeavouring to remoove scandalous ministers and to countenance the godly.

On Munday morning they coming together, the first party (of whom was Sir Charles Worsley,<sup>1</sup> Sir Anthony Ashley Cooper, Colonell Sidenham and Colonell Tichbourne) stood up, and Worsley began, told the Speaker that they had been a good while in the House but had not answered the people's expectations, but instead of seeking their good did what they could against them, endeavouring to take away their properties by taking away the law, to overthrow the Ministry by taking away tythes and settling nothing in their roomes, and severall other things, so that for their parts they would sitt no longer, so that the major part of the House came out of the House with the Speaker and Mace to the Horse Chauber (my Lord Generall and officers being their).

Those of the House, being about 80 in number, drew up an instrument, and subscribing their names delivered it into my Lord Generall's hands, where they left all their power.

<sup>1</sup> Sir Charles Wolseley.



The smaller part, being about 27, remained in the House, where Colonel Gough presently came, and with all meekness told them that he was fearfull their stay their might prove prejudiciall to the Commonwealth, and probably to themselves (they being no House); they desired to know if he had any power, which he denyed, but sweetly argued it with them, but they refusing to heare he opened the doore, and presently entered the file of Musketers upon whose appearance the remaining part of the House withdrew. But here you must take notice, severall of these 27 came from the House Chamber, being of those 80 that resigned up their power.

Presently after this severall of the 80 and officers of the army mett, and upon serious debate concluded their should [be] a person who should be under the title of Lord Protector of England, Scotland, and Ireland, and should have a constant Councell, whose number should not exceed 21 nor be under 13.

### Extracts from Newsletters written in 1654<sup>1</sup>

f. 164. *Nov.* 25, 1654.—The officers mett this day at James about the heads of the petition, and because their number was not so full as they expected they adjourned till the next weeke. . . . The Court Marshall sat in the afternoone upon the Articles presented against Col. Okey, which being read to him he denyed them both as to matter and forme; and for what he had said he was so farre from denyinge as that he would seale it with his blood, and prayed that hee might have a copy of the articles, time to answer, and liberty to advise with such as hee shall think fitt. All which was assented unto, his time for answering beinge 11 daies. Col. Okey is in custody of the Marshall Generall.

f. 167. *Nov.* 30, 1654.—The officers of the Army in a very full meeting yesterday resolved to live and die with his Highness and the present government, and sent some of their members to him to acquaint him therewith, and to desire him to take care for the

<sup>1</sup> From vol. xxvii. of the Clarke MSS. in Worcester College Library, with the exception of the two letters of December 21.



bring[ing] about the due regulating of the Law, satisfying the publique faith, with severall such others formerly insisted upon.

*Dec. 2, 1654.*—Col. Okey's commission is either accepted or f. 167. some other private satisfaction given, whereupon his Highness hath ordered him his liberty.

*Dec. 5, 1654.*—The Parliament is yett upon the Government, f. 170b. and have resolved to sitt forenoone and afternoone untill they have gone through it. The most part of the last weeke was spent about the qualifications of Electors, and the persons to be elected to serve in Parliament, and many negatives passed upon them. An Act is to bee brought in against drinking of healthes, and for multiplying the fines of drunkards in manner as for swearers. It was resolved upon the question, that the persons that shall bee of his Highnes Councell, shall bee nominated by him and approved of by the Parliament. Our shipp[s] have taken all or most part of the French Forts in New England. Yesterday was spent in perfecting the Bill for the next 3 monthes Assesments, and in reading the Bill for regulating the Chancery the first time. The officers of the Army having meet severall dayes at St. Jameses,<sup>1</sup> after time sett a part for seeking God, they drew up the inclosed, and presented them to his Highnes the last weeke, which hee received with much respect, assuring them of his assistance for the accomplishment thereof. The propoalls were presented by

Col. Ashfield	Major Packer	Major Creede
„ Cowper	Lt. Col. Mills	„ Boteler
Lt. Coll. White	Major Blackmore	Captain Spencer
„ „ Mason	„ Winthrop	„ Empson.

*Dec. 7.*—Col. Allured was this day brought before a Court f. 171b. Marshall, and his charge being read before [him] the Court ordered him a coppie thereof, and 14 dayes time to putt in his answer.

<sup>1</sup> On the meeting of the officers at St. James's, see Robert Vaughan's *The Instrements of Oliver Cromwell*, i. 80, 87.



f. 175a. Dec. 16.—This day Col. Saunders also attended his Highness, and after he had declared his dissatisfactions, his Highness told him the trust which was formerly reposed in him must not be longer continued. Whereupon Col. Saunders replied, that he would speedily send for and deliver his commission.

### An Intercepted Letter<sup>1</sup>

f. 16. Another squadron of the great flecte is gone. The Rendezvous is to bee at Barbadoes. The designe is secrett, knowne to the designer onely, whoe saith if hee thought his shirt knew it hee would burne it, and yet as secrett as it is, possibly hee may not know God's designe therein, though he may his owne intencion. My thoughts are God's workinge wilbee beyond his invencion, for I doe much encline to beleive they may bee eminently usefull, it may be in destroying some notable obstruction, and of greate advantage to the Jewes (waite but a while and you shall see the salvation of God come to Israel). The present effect is startling to all nacions round about, all in a waiting frame where this cloud will light, and its a heud of encouragement to some weake or suffering Christianses, not knowing but it may prove there releife. Such is the provision for warre, the multitude and magnitude of mortar peices and cannons, as never the like went out of England, and is to the amasement of the greate prisoners in the Tower whoe have the advantage of seeing and woudring onely.

As to the army they are a travaileing wombe, still many throwes towards a birth which cannot be accomplished without the man-mid-wife, whoe is as hee sayth willing (though at the present not at leisure), butt when the sylent [*sic*] Parliament hath runne out its tyme, it may be the opportunity will be, and the delivering tyme come. The Parliament at present verry busy about herresy, what

<sup>1</sup> This letter and the following, both derived from vol. xxvii. of the Clarke MSS., were addressed to one of the officers arrested in Scotland for the plot known as 'Overton's Plot,' and were probably found on one of the prisoners. Probably Mr. Oates was the person to whom they were written. (See *Scotland and the Protectorate*, p. 210.)





it is, and to enumerate them. They have putt one Biddle in prison for denying the Holy Ghost to be God in order to his tryall, and if they should hang him they would not chaunge his mind. though I thinke it bee a verry daingerous one, and thus in tyme theirs tyme will have an end, with what publicke workes donne by them records will beare them testimony, for I cannott.

Colonel Okey by some greate ones in the army was accused for treason, butt by the pole of 2 more for him then against him hee was acquitted.

The army presented these particulers to his Highnes.

1. That liberty of conscience be allowed, but not to papistry in publicke worship.p.

2. That tythes be taken away.

3. That a law be made for the righting persons wronged for liberty of conscience.

4. That the lawes of the Nacion be regulated.

5. That all prisoners whoe are able to pay their debts and will not may be compelled.

6. That the poore be sett on worke.

7. That Articles be made good to those whoe have beene in actuall armes against the State.

8. That all just debts of the Nacion be sattisfyed, whether money or goods lent upon publicke fayth, or just debts for service donne. An ould lesson not yett learnt, repetitions are good.

Mr. John Sympsen is now come to London, and hath I heare taken of the prejudice which some friends had of him; hee was at Allhallowes yesterday, and opened Psalm 102; 19, 20, 21. Hee declared his sufferings for Christ, that it was in declaring against the sinnes of men, and though hee was accused for treason, yett hee never spake against any man but it was from the law of God or of the land, and therefore was not guiltye. He gave reasons why hee obeyed the order of banishment. Because liberty is desyreable, and hee might be usefull (and hath beene) in the countrey. And why then did hee breake the Order? Because



of reports by many was that he desired to be banished from the City, and had no mynd to come to his Church, and that it was given out from the Court that he might come to London if he would, whereupon he thought himselfe noe further engaged, but was bound to shew his readyness to serve Christ and his Church, though he ventured his life in it. I rejoyce to heare of some strivings of heart among you. The Lord encrease it, continue it, and answere it. In [?] Bristol, I have heard was a high spiritt of expectacion of God's poweringe at his Spiritt, which now they judge is answered in the generacion of the Quakers, and multitudes there are taken therewith, and the eminent in profession of grace too. I write this by way of caution, the Lord helpe us to be watchfull and faythfull to the end. Your Friend &c.

London, 19. December. Mr. Peaches book is published entitled Defiance to the Father of Lyes.

Another letter of the same date from another hand

f. 17b. I have nothing of newes worth writeing, neither can I heare how affaires in the West are carrièd, because there is an extraordinary closeness amonge them. Mr. John Simpson is come to London uppon Saturday last, and preached the next day at his wonted place, and on Munday in the evening alsoe. He seemeth to be of the same spirit as formerly, zealously protesting that he never did in the least swerve from these things for the testifiing whereof he was imprisoned. He declared verie much the greates advantages he hath found in his spiritt during his sufferings, the glorious pre-ence of God that hath been within him, giving him greater joy and satisfaction then ever he had in all his life before.

As I suppose his text was Psalme 102 : 19, 20, 21, (though he had named it before I came), which words when he had opened he did aply them unto himselfe, as w<sup>ch</sup> which he had in especieall manner experienced the truth of in his owne spirit. He encouraged



the saintes to persevere in waiting upon God, being confident that the thinges in their expectacions are neere at hand, and among other discourse he tooke occasion to speake of these that sitte at Whitehall to try Ministers, and did protest against their standing as absolute Anti-christian, and their way as being altogether disconsonant to the word of truth, saying that he could with as good a conscience goe to the Pope and his Cardinalls for their approbation, as to them, and that he could rather put his necke in a halter or lay it upon a blocke, then he could goe to those men at Blackhall for their seale. Next Munday to be observed there all the day if God permitt.

Yours &c.

Decemr. 19<sup>o</sup>. 1651.

### Extracts from Newsletters

*Dec. 21.*—This afternoon Col. Allured appeared the second time before the Court-Martial, and upon his desire they granted him further time for the putting in of his answer, till this day sennight. f. 176b.

*Dec. 23.*—This day Mr. Ueake and ten more of his church had above four hours conference with his Highness as to some dissatisfaction that lay upon them, which his Highness (in greate measure) cleared before they departed. . . . Col. Allured gave in an answere to his charge on Thursday last, but denied both matter and form therein, and hath till Thursday next given him to put in any further answere. f. 177a.

### A Newsletter

*Westminster, December 28, 1651.*—All this day the Parliament have bin in an House upon the Bill for the Governement, except an houre which the House adjourned at noone, and they are like to sitt very late, I am perswaded they will not rise til 8 or 9 this night. They had passed the 6 first chapters, for soe they call these before called Articles, and are now this afternoone goeing on soe farre as they can. What else the Parliament hath done you may



see at large in the inclosed, onely this I shall adde, that a few daies since when the House was in a Grand Committee of the whole House upon the Government, Mr. Garland mooved to have my Lord Protectour crowned, which mocion was second[ed] by Sir Anthony Asldey Cooper, Mr. Hen. Cromwell, and others, but waved — nothing was done in it more. There is a regiment of horse more come up hither, and the foot draw close neare us here, and some ordnance to be brought to or neare Whitehall to be planted somewhere about the walles. The Generall rumour is of some plott discovered by the Papists (that are French) about London, but it is at present private. One of the senturies at Jameses that was in drinke, standing neare the Chappell doore in the night thought hee had seene a tall black man come to him, and pressing (as hee thought) to him hee discharged with a bullett, thinking hee had kild him, whereupon the souldyours and officers many of them tooke alarm, and came out, but saw nobody, seeking with lightes about the place, yet since (here 2 nights agoe) another not in drinke being fearefull that it was a spiritt, as he said to some before hee went on the sentry, was frighted upon presumption that hee saw the like, and this some would make a bugbeare. Wee have yet noe newes from General Blake, the ships are all gone, the expedition from Portesmouth with a gallant wind, and General Desborow return'd last night hither. As for other newes I referre you to the inclosed.

Yours &c.

H. WAWKER.

### Extracts from Newsletters

- f. 180. Dec. 30, 1654 — The bringing of severall regiments of horse and foote this day to quarter in Westminster hath given an alarm to all, the meaninge thereof not yet known. . . . The reason of contracting quarters, and doubling guards, and planting ordnance at Whitehall and St. James's is said to bee upon a plot now in agitation against his Highness, whoe are [*sic*] to march an army out of





Scotland to joyne with some in England, and they are said to endeavour to secure his Highness person, and bring up a new modell of government to the Parliament, whereupon his Highness hath sent for some suspected persons of quality hither and spoke with several considerable officers of the Army, and if any such thing be I hope this timely discovery of it will nip it in the bud.

### Newsletters 1655.<sup>1</sup>

*Westminster, January 2, 1654.*—It was nott thought fitt to lett f. 8.  
the Blades goe on any longer who were att worke to have brought new troubles upon us, and therefore the last W[ednesday] night wee seized upon some who had commision to raise forces, alsoe some armes were taken. The Parliament hath passed two-thirds of the Government. The winde still continues easterly, soe that wee looke to heare noe more of the flecte till wee heare of their arrivall.

G. D.

*Westminster, January 6.*—In reference to the late plott men- f. 14b.  
tioned in my last, many hundreds of pistolls weere brought downe hence by carriers, and [sent] on Munday last as tokens to disaffected persons in the country, callinge them in their letters so many dozen bottles of canary. And searcheing the gunsmyths' house from whence they came they found 1000 fixed armes; upon which the gunsmyth and severall others are now under examination. All the generall and field officers were summoned to meet the same day upon the triall of Collonel Allured; who desired them to present his petition to his Highnesse, wherein he acknowledged his Highnesse former favour to him, and desired his discharge, the matters beinge not cognizable by a Court Marshall. But the Court refused, and gave him time till Munday next to put in any further answer to his charge, and that day to proceed to judgment upon the whole matter. The House was againe this day and Towsday upon the Bill of Government, and made a large progresse therein. Wednesday the House went over the businesse of tender consciences. Lords

<sup>1</sup> The newsletters for 1655 are all from vol. xxvii. of the Clarke MSS.  
VOL. III.



Commissioners of the Seale and Lord Admirall as they were formerly voted. The Genoa Embassidour came in grate state Thursday night to Sir Abraham William's house in Westminster. Alsoe Wednesday, Thursday, and Friday, many persons of quality from Kent and other parts were examined upon the new plott, and most of them committed, haveinge received Commissions from Charles Stewart to raise forces.

This day the Genoa Embassidour had audience, and prayed for amity betweene both Nations. Yesterday and to-day the Parliament ordered that a million per annum be issued by his Highnesse and Councell for payment of all the forces by sea and land, and to continue so longe as the Parliament shall hereafter declare.

Your Excellencies most humble servant,

GILBERT MARROR.

January 6, 1654.

- L. 306. *January 20, 1654.* Munday last a report was made by the Committee appointed to consider of a Revenue of the Customes and otherwise, that 100,000<sup>li</sup> per annum should bee added to the 300,000<sup>li</sup> per annum for maintenance of the navy and sea ports, which the Howse assent'd unto, and ordered it to bee part of the Bill for Government, but the time for continuing the payment of the 700,000<sup>li</sup> per annum for the land forces is the question now in dispute. Majour Generall Overton was Tuesday last sent prisoner to the Tower. About 4 of clock on Wednesday morning the House came to this result, that his Highnesse and Councill shall by their warrant issue out of the Exchequer 1,300,000<sup>li</sup> per annum, 260,000<sup>li</sup> thereof for maintenance of his Court &c., 100,000<sup>li</sup> for the navall forces and Port townes, and 700,000<sup>li</sup> for the land forces, which last summe is to bee continued [only] till the 25 of December 1659. Wednesday the Howse ordered that the Bill should bee ingrossed in order to be presented to the Lord Protector, and if consent bee not given therunto by the Lord Protector and Parliament it shalbee null. Thursday the Howse sat upon the private businesse.



Friday the Bill being ingrossed was read: a provisoe was made for the setting of the Militia in his Highness and Councill in the intervall of Parliament, which held the howse all that day in debate, but came to noe result. His Highnesse haveing give orders for the transporting 3000 foote from Ireland muse came that they were put in at Holy Head, but bound for Lerverpoole: orders are likewise given for the marching of 6 troopes of horse into Scotland. This day a provisoe past for confirming all antient and legall grants and charters formerly granted to all the citties and corporations in England. A provisoe likewise paste that noe Militia forces should bee raised, exercised, or armed but by consent of his Highnesse and the Parliament; severall provisoes more are left to bee debated though this bee the last day of the Parliament's legall Session.

G. M.

c

*January 23, 1654.*—Yesterday in the forenoone the Lord Protector sent a short lèttré to the Parliament, letting them know it was his pleasure they should forthwith meete him in the Painted Chamber, which accordingly they did.

His Highnes did there make a very exellent speech<sup>1</sup> to them, declaring the greates hopes that he and all the people of the nation had in their meeting for peace and settlement, but to his greates griefe and trouble they had spent their time soe as he could not know whether they were alive or dead. That divers sorts of people as Cavileers, Levellers, and others disc[ont]ented were like bryars and thornes growen up under their shadow, endeavouring the seduceing and disaffecting of the people from Magistracy and Ministry, and the private souldiers from their officers. And that they had [done] nothing as to liberty for tender consciences.

That they had brought the army to a necessity of takeing free quarter. That many of them too much manifested their dissatisfaction to the Government, notwithstanding their signing the recognition agreeable to the Indenture.

<sup>1</sup> Carlyle's *Cromwell*, speech iv.



That there was secret plots and contrivances both at home and abroad, to hazard the nations into new and bloody warre, therefore he was necessitated to declare that from henceforth they should be dissolved. I doe not doubt but that he and his Councell will vigorously set uppon it to doe and bring forth such good thinges as shall give generall satisfaction to all, except implacable enemies and restlesse spiritts.

- f. 32b. *Argard, January 23, 1654.*—Yesterday the Parliament mett, and were in debate about some other provisoes to bee added to the Government. About 11 clock the Speaker received a letter from my Lord Protector, which he forthwith communicated to the Howse, which was to this effect, that he did desire to speake with the Parliament immediatly in the Painted Chamber, whither they forthwith went, and his Highness coming in spake about a howre and a halfe to them. The substance of his speech was to let them know the greate hoapes hee conceived at their first meeting, together with the happy posture those nations were then in of peace and settlement: that under their shaddow, and thorow their Howse a[nd its] resolution[ies], bryers and thornes were growne upp, both among the Cavillere and Leviling men, even to the hazard of all: that hee could a bin heartily glad in all their five monthes time since to a heard from them, but was not soe happie, and that hee had sent to them, had hee not feared hee might have seemed to have bin an intrenshing uppon their priviledges: that upon the whole hee thought it not convenient [for them] to sit any longer, and therefore hee did dissolve this Parliament. Whereupon every one departed without a word his severall way. G. D.

- f. 37b. *January 27, 1654.*—The next day after the dissolution of the Parliament his Highnesse refresht himselfe with the aire in Hyde Parke, where hee likewise dined. Wednesday his Highnesse spent some tyae about the setting of his Councell, wherein Sir Anthony Ashley Cooper hath not lately sat; but that the Lord Whitlock and Mr. Serjeant Glyn are added thereunto (as generally reported)





is not yet knowne. Thursday was spent in debating an ordinance for continuinge an Assesment of 60,000<sup>li</sup> per mensem. Friday they spent in a day of Humiliacion at Whitehall (with some cheife officers of the army) seeking God for a blessing upon their Councells. This day his Highnesse speech was passed in order to the presse, it being transcribed out of short[hand], but it wilbe Thursday next before it bee published. Major G. Overton is committed close prisoner to the Tower.

*Westminster, January 30, 1654.*—Generall Blake hath taken f. 39.  
2 French shippes bound for Tolon from Turkie; his flecte is still before Lygorne, itt is apprehended hee will gett considerable reparacions from the Duke of Tuscany. 60 Cardinalls were come to Rome to assist the eleccion of a new Pope. There is a scurrilous pamphlett come forth yesterday intituled, A Declaration of the Excluding the last Parliament, butt itt is without any name to itt, nor owned by any. The French treaty is nere concluded on, butt nott yett fully ended. G. D.

*Westminster, February 3, 1654.*—His Highnesse nott having f. 43.  
time to peruse his speech and correct itt for the presse is the reason why itt is nott yett published. A transcript hath bin made (this weeke) of the Bill upon which the late Parliament [spent] all their time, to the end it may be perused by his Highnes, and Conneell, and that some satisfaction may be given to the nation therein. This, and the great busines of the raising of monys, hath [taken] up his Highnes and Councell these 4 last days. There was a designe lately to have surprised Bewmarris, but the designe beeing happily discovered, the cheife actor therein is apprehended. The 15 of the last month Generall Blake was safe at Leghorne, beeing put in there by fowll weather.

*Westminster, February 6.*—The Assesment is out att 60,000<sup>li</sup> f. 43.  
per mensem. There are some more plotters discover'd, together with divers parcells of horse armes. Sir Humphry Bennett of Surry, Colonel Thornhill of Cambridgeshire, Colonel Gray of



Northumberland, and one Weston are taken. Bennet had turned his whole estate into monies, and had expended very much thereof in providing armes, and other necessaries, to goe on in the desigene. There is alsoe one Reade who was solicitor to the Lord Craven, and was a prime carrier on of the businesse. C. D.

- f. 41. *Westminster, February 8, 1654.*—The Members that served in the late Parliament for Scotland came to take their leaves of his Highnesse, and laying downe the heavy greivance of that nation by reason of a very numerous army his Highnesse told them, that the reason thereof was because the Ministry did preach uppe the interest of Charles Stuart, and did much inveigh against the present authority, soe that there was a necessity of their continuance, but if they could propose any expedient with a salvo to the security of that Nation, hee was willinge to answer their desires therein: wheruppon the said Members are now consideringe of an expedient. Many dayes have beene spent upon settlinge of the legislative power of the Nation. One of Sir T. Weston's sons, Collonell Grey, Sir Humphrey Bennet, and one Read, with 7 or 8 more, were yesterday apprehended upon the late plott, the last of which in his chamber was found many armes, and letters to him from Charles Stuart.
- f. 45b. *Westminster, February 13.*—Sithence my last the inclosed order and declaracion for the next 3 monthes Assesement was published. His Highnesse by nott making itt an ordinance hath modestly denied to assume the legislature of the Nation, though satisfied by many able judges and lawyers he may legally doe it. The Lord Howard's brother was yesterday burnt in the hand in Westminster-hall for manslaughter. By this time the last desigene of the Cavillers was come to a ripenes, for yesterday they intended to have taken away the life of his Highnesse, this day to rise in all the westerne partes, to morrow in all the northerne partes of the Nation. Hereuppon his Highnesse dispersed all officers in towne to their commands abroad, called in hither the forces that came



lately out of Ireland, tripled the guards, and scoured the city and 4 miles round with horse, and secured the last night most of the horse in the city and suburbs, till their owners give a good accompt of themselves; but God be praised all is yet in quietnes, onely a greate fire (burning the Red Lyon Inne in Fleet streete with about 20 howses more on their backside) caused much concourse of people to quench it. This day his Highnesse made a large and satisfactory speech to the Lord Mayor, Aldermen, and many of the common Councell, of the reall ground of this new intended warre, and afterwards read Charles Stuart's letter and many materiall depositions for proving thereof, as alsoe Major Wildman's draught of a declaracion (shewing the grounds of the same) when he was taken Saturday last, dictating of it to his clarke, for which he is now committed to Chepstow Castle, and will probably loose his life. A Commission was likewise read giving power to the Lord Maior, Aldermen, Major Generall Skippon, and others, to secure, disarm and raise forces for defence of the city, but not any of these to be drawne forth without their owne consents, to which they did willingly agree.

*February 21, 1654.*—The city have named Alderman Underwood, Alderman Tichborne, and — to bee 3 of their Collonells to comand their Militia regiments. They have issued out warrants to collect the next 6 monthes Assesment upon the order and declaracion of his Highnesse to that purpose, and sent a Comitteo to his Highnesse to give him thankes for his care of their safety. The Lord Grey is sent up hether by a party, and is now under restraint. Majour Generall Harrison, Quartermaster Generall Courtney, and Mr. John Carey are sent away prisoners in a coach and 4 horses westward, its conceived to Pendennis Castle. Collonell Rich hath leave to goe to his dying wife in the country for some tyme. His Highnesse and severall of his Councill went Thursday last to Hampton Court to celebrate the nuptiall of one of his neece[s] married to Judg Lockyart of Scotland. The expected peace with France is neere breaking off, if not wholly.



The report of the Duke of Yorke's landing is a mere storey of the Malignant party. This evening wee heere that Mr. Carey is sent to the Mount in Cornwell, Majour Generall Harrison to Portland Castle, and Mr. Courtney to Cowes Castle in the Isle of Wight.<sup>1</sup>

*February 27, 1654.*—Bagnell upon his ingenuous confession and 2000<sup>li</sup> bayle sett at liberty. Major Wildman's man that wrote the declaracion is escaped. The greates busines here now in hand is the settling Scotland and Ireland. My [Lord] Henry this day had monies voted for his expenses in preparing for Ireland to be Conneellour and Commander of the forces under the Deputy, yet he hath not as yet wholly given his assent to goe.

G. D.

- f. 55. *Westminster, March 3, 1654.* His Highnesse with advice and consent of his Councill hath past an ordinance for reviving the former ordinance against horse races for 6 monthes longer. And likewise an ordinance for reviving the Court of the Dutchey of Lancaster, wherein Sergeant Bradshaw and Judge Fell are continued judges till all causes begun and depending therein bee determined. The Lord Henry Cromwell is hasting away for Ireland, his present commission is Majour Generall, and is likewise named one of the Councill. The Irish are unwilling to transplant or prove theire qualifications, but they will bee forc'd to goe and make way for the English planters. Majour Wildman's servant is escaped out of Ludlow Castle, but himselfe not nimble enough to doe the like. The Lord Grey is removed to Windsor Castle. Colonel Rich is againe in the Sergeant at Armes his custody.

- f. 57b. *Westminster, March 10.*—His Highnesse and Councill have bin very busy this weeke in considering of faithfull and able persons in every county to bee entrusted with commissions for raising of horse and foote, which are to bee in the nature of a standing

<sup>1</sup> See Thurloe's letter to Mordaunt on the imprisonment of Harrison and Courtney, *Clarke Papers*, ii. 242.





Militia, many clerkes being now imployed for drawing Commissions for that purpose. An informacion was given that the Earle of Ormond, Lord Inchiquin, Majour Generall Massey, had taken shipping and intended for England, but wee heare noe further nuse of them, however a party of horse and foote are marched downe to secure Rochester Bridg in Kent, and scower the parts adjacent in case there bee occasion. To prevent Majour Wildman's escape his person was this weeke removed from Chepstow Castle to the Tower of London. Colonel Sexby, being supposed to bee equally guilty with Majour Wildean in his intended designe, was like to bee secured in the West, and at Hartley Rowe a party of horse seized on his portmantua with some writeings of concernement therein, and likewise a suite of extraordinary armes, but himselfe escaped. His Highnesse and Councell resolving to put in speedy execution theire former ordinance for regulatēg of the Chancery doe hereby much displease the long rolemen of the Nation. The nominateing a Lord Deputy and Councell for the Governement of Scotland is much spoken of, but not yet resolved. The French breaking off. The greate friggott upon the stockes at Wollidg (3 foote longer then the Royall Sovereigne) is named the Naisely, and will bee lancht within these 11 dayes.<sup>1</sup> 29th January last Generall Blake was saileing from Leghorne to Tunis Roade, where the men of warr belonging to Algier and Tripolis are to meete shortly.

*Newcastle, March 13, 1654.*—Friday night last a partie of 1500. Cavaleers was gott together within 3 miles of this towne, and did intend to have assaulted itt in 3 severall parts, butt they receiving intelligence that their plott was discover'd, tis saide are gone to Yorkeshire. Alsoe Colonel Lilburne writes that a party [of] Cavaleires under the command of Mr. Richard Maleverer was to assaulte Yorke, but being affrighted left 200 armes, one barrell of powder, and severall bodd horses at the hedges alsoe, at Hossam-Moore. In Nottinghamshire there was 500 of the old race did

<sup>1</sup> Cf. Evelyn's *Diary*, April 9, 1655.



randevow, but being in an affright, left their cart loaded of ammunition and runn away; tis thought this plott was laid in moste of the countries in England, and I have had severall allarams of it in this place. Notice has bin given of it to his Highnesse. I onely waite to receive an answer of some letters from London, and to returne to attend your commands; 4 companies I heare are ordered from Barwick to this towne, it being valued by your eminency.

- f. 60. *Westminster, March 13, 1654.*—Yesterday night came letters from Collonell Hacker that a party of Cavaleires (given out to be a 1000 horse) [was got together] in Nottinghamshire, and that hee had sent 3 troopes of horse to discover them, but to bee tender of ingageing in case they weere that number. Captaine Cressett and another messenger came this morning from Salisbury, and informed his Highnesse that 300 mounted and well armed Cavaleires tooke yesternorning about 1 a clock Judge Rolls out of his bed, and forc't his comission from him, and tooke Colonel Dove the Sheriffe prisoner, and secured the horse in the towne. Another information is come from Strousebury of a designe in the Cavaleeres to secure that garrison, for which purpose 20 horse with armes were laid privately nere the towne, and some few men had entered the Castle in women's apparell, but being happily discovered are all secured. His Highnesse hereupon hath secured most of the horse of the city and subburbes the last night, and mounted 500 foote, which with Generall Desborow and his regiment are marched towards Salisbury.

A party is preparing for North Wailes under Majour Generall Reynolds, where they begin likewise to heade. The citty is hastening the settlement of the Militia, whereby more forces may bee spared hence.

G. M.

- f. 60b. The last post informed you of the gathering together of about 500 horse in the Forrest of Sherwood, and of their scattering of themselves after they had bin together 4 or 5 howers; the reason



whereof wee suppose to bee, they not finding things to concur according to their expectation. In North Wailes there were alsoe about 800 gathered together, of whome I heare noe farther as yet. There were divers Cavaleeres gathered together in Shrewsbury with an intent to have surprized the Castle, in the manner of some Gentlemen clothed in woman's apparell [who] were to have surprized the sentrey and kept up the gate,<sup>1</sup> while others who should have bin drincking in aile howses close by should have entered in and surprized it, but they were discovered and taken; search alsoe being made at Sir Thomas Harnisse, and the rest of the riders, they alsoe found hidden a barrell of powder and 80 pare of pistolls.

Yesterday morning about 2 howers before day Majour Generall Wiggstaffe entered Salisbury with about 200 horse, and the Assises being then there they tooke away theirs and the lawyers horses, abaseinge the Judges, and marching away towards Blanford.<sup>2</sup>

G. D.

*Westminster. March 15. 1654.*—About 60 persons were gathered together uppon Hossam Moore in Yorkshire under Sir Richard Maliverer of Allerton, but finding themselves to be noe more they dispersed, but afterwards there was apprehended and brought prisoners to Yorke Sir Richard Maliverer, Sir Henry Slingsby, Sir William Ingram, Colonel Brandling, Squire Hatton, Mr. Loftus, Andrew Hales of Yorke, with divers others, and more were daily securing who were at the meeting.

Thursday night the 8 instant was the time for the breakeing out throughout England. Those about New Castle gave order to their comrades to come to Duddoe, where they were to wash the bridegroomes head, and the wedding was to be kept at New Castle that night, but tis said they failing of Mrs. Bride were by order to goe Southward to joine with a partie of their owne that way, but were disapointed. Collonel Howard hath secured about 80 of

<sup>1</sup> MS. 'country and kept up the gent.'

<sup>2</sup> MS. 'Blanford.'



the enemy in Northumberland, and sent 10 of the chiefe of them to Tinnmouth Castle and 60 to Carlile. Generall Disbrow was the 15 instant about Amesbury, Major Butler was about 12 miles more to the West, soe that the next day they would joine. Major Generall Wagstaffe was the 11 instant with about 300 at Evill in Dorset-shire, tis thought they intend to escape as many as they can by water into Wales, but that is hardly possible for them to doe, at most not above 20 of them. There is noe stirring in Wales, nor any in armes that wee know of except these in Dorsetshire.

1. 63. *Westminster, March 17, 1651.*—Since my last wee heare that a person of qualitie suppesed the Earle of Newcastle, came to Hessay Moore in Yorkeshire to head the partie gather'd by Sir Richard Malivory of Allerton, but finding there number not above 80 he distuist them to their homes; a small number did the like in Northumberland. The Lord Tafton sonne to the Earle of Thanett was taken in Londen with his buff coate, suite of armes, pistolls, great saddle, as he was takeing horse and goeing downe to raise the cuntry of Kent, he is since sent to the Tower, and his Highness hath bestowed his buff coate on Collonel Heane, Governor of Jersey, who hath a comission to raise a regement of horse in Kent, and every troope in England to recruite up to a 100. Many informacions are come that Charles Steward, Major Generall Massey, Lord Ormond, and Inchiquine are come for England; strickt searches are and wilbe made for them. The cyty Militia drawes into a body and exeersises Tewsday next. Commissioners are sent into every cuntry for setleing a Militia therein. The happy newes of takeing 50 and rowting the whole late Malignant partie in England by Captain Unton Crook's troope of Collonel Berries regiment is printed by spetial order. Orders are this night sent to the Commissioners for sequestration for several Countiees to sequester all the estates of all the traitors in this late rebellion, which will amount to a considerable summe. There were 2000 of the cuntry people in Sumerset-shire up in armes against the rebellion. The Sheriffe of Devon-shire, who had a comission





dormant, did raise a regiment, and placed 400 in Exeter, and tooke the feild with the rest, by which you may perceave what assistance they may like to have in the contry.

*Westminster, March 20, 1654.*—Charles Stuart is nott yett farre off, and certainly the happiness of this businesse will bee to finde out some of those multitudes that were engaged in all parts. Captain Crooke hath taken in all neere 100 prisoners, butt nott Wagstaffe as yett. This day was a very handsome appearance of the Londoners in armes. One of our frigetts riding before Brest to keepe in the pickeroones sunke one of them having 5 guns. Generall Penn and the fleet are happily arriv'd att the Barbadoes, and have taken in very many men there for this expedition. The Dutch build frigetts very fast. The French uppon these insurrections stopped all English vessells in France, and pressed seamen extreame fast. Their Ambassadour was to have taken leave of his Highnesse Tuesday last, butt some demurre is made. f. 65.

G. D.

*Westminster, March 21, 1654.*—Munday last came lettres from Colonel Howard, that many of the prisoners hee hath lately taken in the northerne Counties confesse that their designe was to have seized Timmouth Castle, and the towne of New Castle. The Genoa Ambassadour (their masters and the King of Spaine being agreed) tooke leave the same day of his Hig[h]nesse. Tuesday last Theauroh John came into the Pallace yard Westminster (being at liberty uppon baile till the next terme) with 3 before him, one carying a mace, another a sword, and the third a bowe and arrowes, and leaving 3 arrowes crosse each other in the Pallace yard, gave a waterman 20s. to cary him crosse the Thames. The same day alsoe newes came that the French have seized all the English and Dutch ships in harbour, and have a greate presse of Marriners; what their designe is wee yet know not. The Lord Buccaris,<sup>1</sup> the greate estate man of Scotland, (tis said) hath late passed through England f. 66.

<sup>1</sup> Balaunas (?).



towards the Highlands, but the after game of the French and himselfe cannot be well played, seeing their foregame there is lost. Since my last we heare that about 200 of them that were in armes in the West are taken prisoners, the country pickes them up in every corner, keepinge guards in all places. Lieutenant Colonel Rogers hath imprisoned Colonel Birch of Hereford for speakeing disaffectedly, and suspiciously. Sir Richard Maliverer is taken in Cheshire. Wednesday last was observed as a day of Thanksgiving by his Highnesse and Councell. The French Ambassadors seems not to be all together upon the spur to be gone, as he was the last weeke. Wee heare from France that Generall Pen's fleet is safely arrived at the Barbadoes, where they have taken in nere 1000 men. The damage by a lamentable fire this weeke in Thridneedle streete amounts not to lesse then 30,000<sup>li</sup>. The generall report here of the securing Charles Stuart and the Duke of Buckingham at Yorke is but a report, though the latter may be suddenly.

G. M.

The Duke of Savoy hath evicted [?] an edict to banish all protestants out of his dominions. Noe newes as yett of a new Pope this said they will swear him to a neutralitie between the 2 crownes.

G. D.

f 68. *March 31, 1655.*—Care is taken how to improve this late plott. It seemeth as if the French and wee shall hardly agree. Hee demonstrates hee hath noe minde to an agreement if hee can otherwayes help himselfe. Charles Stewart lies as yett in obscurity to us, but the Duke of Buckingham will bee more easily discovered. Collonell Howard hath lately secured his owne brother, and diverse others of the no[r]thern Gentry. His Highnesse hath given Majour Generall Morgan's<sup>1</sup> regiment to Lieutenant Collonell Mitchell (a very ingenious and deserving person). Wednesday

<sup>1</sup> Originally Overton's regiment. Morgan perhaps commanded it between Overton's arrest in December 1654 and March 1655.



morning last an imbargo was put upon all vessels in the river Thames and severall other ports, to continue till the fowerth day of Aprill, by which tyme wee expect to heere what the French intend by draweing downe their army towards our coasts. The Militia of the city had then leave given them to revive thaire artillery company for the trayneing and exercising of well affected persons.

A commission of oyer and terminer is issued out to Baron Thorpe, Serjant Glin, and Recorder Steele to try cruptours at Sailesbury and elsewhere in the west. The Attorney Generall, Mr. Hill, and Graves are appointed Council for the Commonwealth upon their tryall. The like comission is making out for the tryall of those in the north. Majour Brampton hath his liberty heere, and yesternight Mr. Oates was with his Highnesse, who gave him onely a sharpe reproofe for his follie, upon promise of his faithfull deportment for the future.<sup>1</sup> The Duke of Lenox died Thursday night last. Wee have receeived noe letters this 3 past dayes from France. Wee size all thaire shippes in port and elsewhere, as they doe ours. Caution is given to the merchants heere trading into France to secure their debts, and to provide against a storme.

G. M.

*Westminster, March 31, 1655.*—Wee have taken a French shippe laden with iron and other commodities going for the west. Sir Richard Maudiverer is escaped out of Chester. On Munday the Attorney Generall and others intend for the west for the triall of those who were taken there. The French treaty is att a stand untill an account bee given of the late imbargo of our shippes.

G. D.

*Westminster, April 3, 1655.*—The businesse for the settlement for the Governement of Scotland is neere fini-shed. The imbargo in France was only att Roan, and Deepe, and one other port; orders were sent generallie to make seizure of our English goods, butt not executed.

G. D.

<sup>1</sup> See *Scotland and the Protectorate*, ii. pp. 238, 241, 251, 252.



- l. 70. *Westminster, April 5, 1655.* The new forces added to each regiment of the standing army are againe disbande[d]. Tueday last Generall Desbrow returned from the west. The French Ambasadour comes on againe vigorously for concluding peace upon the treaty, pretending the imbargoe uppon our shippes in France to be onely for the impressing of seamen of their owne for his Majesties service. The imbargo at London is alsoe taken off. His Highnesse was last night untill 11 a clock upon examination of Colonel Penruddock and Colonel Jones, who were of Sir Joseph Wagstaffe's party. His Highnesse and Councill have appointed commissions of oyre and terminer and gaole delivery both for the west and for the north. Baron Thorpe, Serjeant Glyn, and Mr. Recorder Steele, Mr. Long, and Mr. Sadler are for the west, unto whome are added divers Gentlemen of those counties; Justice Nudigate, Justice Nicholas, Justice Windham, and Serjeant Hutton are for the north. Mr. Rogers the minister is removed from Lambeth Howse prisoner to Winsor Castle. Lieutenant Colonel John Lilburne indeavoured to send a pacquett lately for England, but the party that had it before the officer could come to search him threw it over board. Two greate persons were taken by a constable at Aylesbury, and an inkeeper that undertooke their safety untill the next morning put them in a roome from whence they e-scaped. It is thought they were Ormond and Wilmott.<sup>1</sup>

It's talk't of heere, that a President and Councill are to bee appointed for Scotland, that the Lord Broughill is to bee President, Generall Monck, Scout[master] Generall Downeing, and Mr. Desbrow, the earl<sup>2</sup> of Twedaile, Colonel Lockhart, Sir James McDowall of Garthland, and Provost Jefferies are to bee the Members of the Councill.

- l. 73. *Westminster, April 12, 1655.*— His Highnesse and Councill have settled the fines of Scotland, and are now going to lay an Excise upon the commodities of that nation. Colonel Jones and Colonel Penruddock (after their examination at Whitehall) are sent

<sup>1</sup> Tharloe, iii. 281, 337.

<sup>2</sup> MS. 'three.'





downe into the west in order to their tryall. Many other prisoners uppon the same designe are sent from severall countyes, and after examinacion here are in the same manner disposed of.

The imbargo uppon our shippes and seizure to their goods in France is not yet taken off (though the French Ambassadors endeavours to perswade the contrary), which heightens things here against them, and the rather because the Dutch and they are neere uppon a closure and a right understanding of each other. Generall Pen's fleet we here is yet at the Barbadoes taking in men, more clothes are providing for them. The inkeeper of Ailesbury stands committed for letting the Lord Wilmot escape, and Sir Thomas Bainton of Kent is committed to the Tower, who provided a lodging for him in London, but nothing further of Wilmott. Yesterday the greete shipp called the Naisby was endeavoured to bee laucht, but could not for want of water; with this morneing tide shee was gott off. The businesse of France has taken upp much debate, but we are in the darke as to its result, beeing variously reported (?). The French letters say that the order for the seizure of the English goods is taken off, merchants letters say alsoe that the imbargo is taken off. The ratificacion of the Sweedish treaty was yesterday delivered. Wee expect daily the issue of the commissions of oyre and terminer.

*Westminster, April 17, 1655.*—There were arraigned as parties f. 77. in the late rebellion at Salesbury ten persons, whereof 3 weere acquitted, 6 convicted, and one confessed the fact, and submitted to mercy. The 3 that weere acquitted are, William Willoughby of Knoell of that county Esqr., against whome appeared noe probable cause of prosecution.<sup>1</sup> The other two weere Mr. Henry Zouch and Edward Zouch his brother of the same county, though the evidence against the elder was some what plaine, against the other not very cleare.<sup>2</sup> The former of these two pray'd a coppie of the Inditement and Connecill to bee assigned him, which was promised him in case hee should propounde any doubt in law,

<sup>1</sup> See Thurloe, iii. 364, 377.

<sup>2</sup> Thurloe, iii. 377, 378.



the other was denyed it. The first that was convicted was John Lewcas a shopkeeper of about 2 or 300<sup>li</sup> per annum. The next was John Deane of Oxen wood in the same county, an Inns of Court gentleman, very younge, and of good qualitie and estate. The Court did much comendate this gentleman, and advised him to continue his ingenuitie and free confession, that they might have wherempon to intercede for him as a fit object of mercy, but [he] standing so much upon his guilt and defence was upon manifest evidences convicted. The 3d. was one Keney a chirurgion of London. The rest were one John Fryer, Penruddockes man, who was one of the first that were taken in Sailesbury, Henry Lawrence, that were tenant to Penruddock, John Thorpe gentleman, against whome the evidence was very plaine, for that he endeavored the breaking of the prison, and to infecter and horse the prisoners. The last was one Macke, an apothecary of Sailesbury, who confest the fact, and submitted to mercy, and prodneed to the Court his Highnesse protection. There were five more (all persons of the rebellion) convicted for a robbery, two more of Sailesbury were convicted for horse stealing. These are all that were tryed there of that crew (saying onely a horse dealer and a woman for witch craft, both convicted).<sup>1</sup> The Inditements were laide for leavying warr against the Lord Protectour and Governement &c. Contra forma[m] statut[i]. Mr. Sherriffe, my Lord Rolls' servant, Captain Croke, and 4 or 5 more, were the principall witnesses. Mr. Justice Windham gave the charge and managed chiefly the businesse. At Exeter it will fall out to Mr. Serjaunt Glynn's turne, and at Chard to Mr. Recorder Steele's. Joseph Wagstaffe, Mason, Carre, Sir Henry More, Pile, Sarlow, Bold, Chivas a vintner there, Andrewes, Scamoure, Greene, Mompesson, and Cotterell were founde guilty by the Grand Inquest, but are all at large. G. M.

1786. *His statishon*, April 17, 1655. - Merchants' letters from France by the last post doe say, that there is a new stopp of shippes at

<sup>1</sup> Thynloe, iii. 365, 371, 372, 375, 378, 380.



Rochell and other ports in France, although the French Ambassadour hath declared to the Councill, that though his Master should fall out with England, yet hee would not make a prey of poore merchants' shippes to enrich him-elfe withall. Generall Blake hath taken 4 shippes lately in the Straites. G. D.

1751297

*Westminster, April 21, 1655.*—The 12th instant the Lord Commissioner Lisle, Lord Chief Justice Rolls, Serjant Glynn, and Serjant Steele Recorder, broke up their commission at Salisbury. Penruddock and Jones are removed from thence to Exeter in order to their tryall. A restraint (not amounting to an imbargo) is put on all Spanish vessels here for some time; the reason thereof is not yett made publique. There were 10 ordinary persons arraigned at Salisbury as parties in the late rebellion, three where of were acquitted, 6 convicted and one confest the fact, and submitted to mercy, which hee had accordingly. The Inditements were laid for leaving war against the Lord Protector and Government &c. Contra formam statuti. Justice Windham gave the charge and managed chiefly the busines there. At Exeter itt will fall to Serjant Glyn's turne, and at Chard to Mr. Recorder's. The French Ambassadour delays the concluding of a treaty here till hee heare what his Master concludes with Spaine, and how far he can engage other Princes or States for him. Thursday night last the Duke of Lenox his corpes was brought by barge privately to be interred at Hen. 7<sup>th</sup> chappell in Westminster, and it was attended by 16 Barres besides many other persons of quality. . . . An Ambasadour extraordinary is coming hither from Spaine. A great fire happened the last night in Southwarke, where about 10 houses were burnt.

*Westminster, April 21, 1655.*—At Exeter there have bin 3 Bills of High Treason ref<sup>r</sup>d to the Grand Jury, the first against these 10 v<sup>z</sup>te. Colonel John Penruddock, Mr. Hugh Grove, Mr. Richard Rives, Mr. Robert Duke, and Mr. George Duke his brother, Mr. Francis Jones, Mr. Francis Bennett, Mr. Thomas Fitz-James,



Mr. Edward Davy, and Thomas Poulton, all which are convicted of High Treason, excepting Bennett, who was acquitted. The 2d. against Edward Willis, Nicholas Mussell, Wm. Jenkins, Mr. Thomas Hillyard, Mr. William Stroud, Roberte Harris, John Bibbye, John Cooke, and John Haynes, the Sheriffe of Wilts' trumpeter that went along from Salisbury, all which saving Stroud were convicted, Jenkins by confession of the fact, and the rest by the verdict of the Jury that passed on them.<sup>1</sup> The 3d. Bill was against Mr. Henry Collier, Mr. Joseph Collyer his brother, Mr. William Wakes of Blandford, and Christopher Haviland, which I confessed the Indictment after the debate of their claime to Articles from Captain Croke, for their lives, liberties, and estates, which the Captaine affirmeth were noe articles, but verball condicions to this effect, that they should have faire quarter, which they have had, and that he would earnestly intercede with my Lord Protector for their lives, liberties, and estates which likewise he hath done;<sup>2</sup> James Horsington, and John Giles who were in Salisbury goale for robbery, and let out upon this insurrection, Hans Styver a Dutch trumpeter, Abraham Wilson, Richard Browne, and Nich. Broadgate, which 6 have pleaded not guilty, and were to be tryed Saturday last in the afternoone. Penruddecke and Robert Duke pleaded hard for their lives. Grove (one of 100<sup>li</sup> per annum) is a daring and resolute person; but the most desperate were the most ancient of them. Rives and Hillyard, who boldly avowed the fact with justification, disowned the present government, affirmed positively they owed not obedience but to Charles Stuart, for they had sworne they said to be true to the Kinge, and they at present [had] noe legall established government in this nation &c. There are in that goale of such as were parties in this insurrection 105, but noe more of them wilbe impeached, leastwise at this time.<sup>3</sup>

*Wednesday, April 21.*—The Marquesse of Leda<sup>4</sup> is expected in our frigatt, which is sent for him with the first easterly winde

<sup>1</sup> Thurloe, iii. 374.    <sup>2</sup> Thurloe, in. 368, 398.    <sup>3</sup> Thurloe, iii. 396.    <sup>4</sup> Leda.





from Dunkirke. The French Ambassadour makes a piddling still, assuredly they looke to make friends among themselves, which makes them carelesse of a peace with us. Penruddock, Jones, and 13 others are condemned at Exeter. I hope you will heare ere this come to your hands that the Judges in the commissions for the North could not agree upon their businesse, pleading [?] the neerenesse of the terme, a necessity of a conference first with the rest of the Judges, where[fore] the tryall of those in those parts is put off. Care is now taking about reducing of charge of the army, for which end a committee of officers is appointed. His Highnesse will speedilie dispatch with Councell the Governement of Scotland.

G. D.

*Westminster, April 26, 1655.*—These are condemned at Exeter and have sent uppe a petition<sup>1</sup> begging their lives, but hee hath written to the Judges giving them power to shew mercy as they thinke most meete, and last referring them to them: John Penruddock, Henry Groves, Richard Rives, Robert Duke, Francis Jones, George Duke, Thomas Fitz James, Thomas Hilyard, Edward Davis, William Jenkins, William Wake, Henry Collier, Joseph Collier, Anthony Humild, Thomas Poulton, Edward Willis, Joseph Billy, Joseph Cooke, Abraham Wilson, William Hasting-ton, Richard Browne, Mich. Musse, Robert Harris and three trumpeters.

G. D.

*Westminster, May 1.*—Five are condemned at Chard. The commissioners of the Greate Seale doe make some scruple of putting in execution the ordnance for the Chancery, which yett many are of opinion that they will doe itt, otherwayes you may expect a new face of that Court.

G. D.

*Westminster, May 8.*—The Spanish Plate fleet is arrived safe in Spain, which is noe small joy to the Spaniards, and some disappointment to us. His Highnesse hath referr'd itt to a committee

<sup>1</sup> To the Protector.



to consider of lessening the charge of the army, by reducing such number of officers and souldjourns, or lessening their pay as they shall thinke fitt, and to report to his Highnesse. A new Create Scale is almost made, with the addition of Scotland to England and Ireland therein, with his Highnesse pourtraicture on the other side, which makes people heere give out generally that his Highnesse is to bee crowned forthwith, and that a Lord Keeper is to bee made, because the present Lord Commissioners refuse to act by the late ordinance for regulacion of the Chancery. The Marquesse of Leyde (Ambassadour extraordinary for Spaine) landed at Dover, beeing accompanied with two Marqueses besides 70 persons more of his attendants, and this night came in greate state.

Thursday last Barron Thorpe and Justice Newdigate had their pattents taken from them, for refusing to act by the late Commission for tryall of the Northern Risers. The same day the Prince of Transylvania's agent had audience of his Highnesse, wherein hee exprest the high esteeme his Master had of his Highnesse. The same day alsoe came a warrant from his Highnesse and Councill, requiring the Lord Commissioners of the Greate Scale to put in execution the ordinance of his Highnesse and Councill for regulacion of the Chancery as they would answer the contrary. The same day alsoe was appointed for the execution of those condemned (and not since reprived) at Exetour, but how many died wee yet know not. The 6th of February last our fleet sailed from the Barbadoes, where they tooke betweene 4 and 5000 men, and 80 Dutch ships that traded ther contrary to the late Parliament. The tryall of prisoners at Chard is over, and not above 6 condemned. . . .

The French Ambassadour came yesterday to take leave of his Highnesse, and yet that afternoone the French treaty revived. The Lord Protector hath accompanied her Highnesse to Hampton where shee keepe Court all this sumer.

f. 83. *Westminster, May 13, 1655.*—There are 14 executed att Exeter, Penndlock and Jones were beheaded, and the rest hanged; but three executed at Salisbury, the rest reprived and pardoned.



Tuesday the Lord Ambassadour of Spaine had audience in greate state in the Banquetting howse, the substance amounted not to much more then a complement. Last Wednesday night the Master of the Rolles, Mr. Lenthall, was sent for to Whitehall, and being asked whether he would act uppon the ordinance for regulacion of the Chancery, he answered in the negative, uppon which a writ of ease 'tis thought is to be sent to him. The Lords Commissioners being asked the same question, they answered that they had given their reasons why they could not, and their positive answeres being required, they desired to be excused, saying their answeres might easily be extracted out of their reasons.<sup>1</sup> The Committee for lessening the pay of the army have ended the worke, and reduced the pay of the private souldiers out of guarrison to 9<sup>d</sup> per diem, those in guarrison to 8<sup>d</sup> per diem, and troopers to 2s. per diem, disbanded 5 companies of dragoones, and retrenched the pay of each officer soe much as will lessen the pay of the army 28,000<sup>li</sup> per mensem. It is likewise ordered by them that a militia of horse shalbe settled in all the counties of England, each troop to have 8<sup>li</sup> per annum, and the Captain 60<sup>li</sup> per annum, who are to muster 4 times a yeare.

*Westminster, May 19, 1655.*—Generall Blake hath lately fired a castle<sup>2</sup> in Tunis which prejudic't his fleet as they passed by itt, hee hath alsoe fired the dock and harbour belonging to itt, where they made their galleys, and all their other vessels therein; the Turkey marchants here are afraid that their estates must repaire these losses. The retrenchment of the pay of officers and souldiers (mentioned in my last) will bring the armies in England, Scotland, and Ireland, to bee fully paid by the Assessment of 60,000<sup>li</sup> per mensem and the 20,000<sup>li</sup> per mensem assest upon Scotland and Ireland. Friday evening his Highnes went to Hampton Court, where hee continued till Tewsday last. The Spanish Ambassadour hath had a second audience, which was still upon generalls for amity and good correspondence betwene the 2 nations. The French treaty goes

<sup>1</sup> See Whitelock's *Memoirs*, iv. 191-206, ed. 1-53.

<sup>2</sup> Forte Farino.



on slowly, but its thought surely. Two Gentlemen were taken this weeke upon suspition intendedly to act a designe against his Highnes person, for that in one of their pocketts was found a letter to his freind in Holland, that the engine was now ready, and that it would doe execution upon the tyrants person at least 300 yards distance. The Lord Deputy of Ireland is gone into Connaught to settle that province. A petition is come lately from Ireland that the rest of the Irish may be banisht and confined according to the late Act of Parliament in that behalfe. Serjeant Mainard, Serjeant Twisden, and Waddam Windham, were yesterday taken from the bar in Westminster Hall, and sent prisoners to the Tower; the cause not knowne, but vulgarly given out for beeing of Councell for one Cony against the Common wealth, who refused to pay custome for goods, and beeing committed by the Committee for Preservation of Customes, brought a Habeas Corpus, upon which his tryall should then have beene, but the certaine truth heerof your Honour may expect by the next.

442. *Westminster, May 21, 1655.*—The true cause of Serjeant Moynard, Serjeant Twisden, and Waddam [Windham's] commitment to the Tower was for their pleading to the Court, that the ordinance of his Highnesse and Councill for receiving the customes was noe better then a private order of a Councill table. The Upper Bench Court have granted a Habeas Corpus for the Lord Grey committed to Windsor Castle, and the Sherriffe making a returne that the Governoure will not deliver them, its saide they have since granted a Posse Cominatus, and what the High Sherriffe will doe thereupon the people are in greate expectation of. Monday morning last these Scottch Lords, (vizt.) Lothberdaile, Sincloere, Kelley, and Crawford, with two Ashburnhams, and the Lord Granson<sup>1</sup> were sent from the Tower (where they weere prisoners), but to what other place or places of restraints their nerest relations must not yet know. 12 saile of shippis with men and other supplies will be ready within 11 dayes to sett saile from hence towards Generall

<sup>1</sup> Grandison(?).





Penn. The Dutch are about paying 55,000<sup>li</sup> to our merchants in lieu of our losses sustained by them in the East Indies. The merchants have petitioned that a committee may bee appointed to pay it equally to each mans losses. Tuesday last wee had letters from Generall Penn dated March 24th as hee was under saile at the Barbadoes, having on bord 7000 souldjourns besides 1000 seamen, all in good health. Yesterday the same Court of Upper Bench granted another Habeas Corpus for Coney, an erreure being founde in the former, and Saturday next the debate will bee resumed. The Lord Biron and his sonne with others are lately committed to the Tower. Colonel Grove and Pennudlock lost their heads but this weeke upon one scaffold at Exetour. Generall Blakes firing 11 shippes in Porto Domingo, and battering the Castle with the losse of 30 men, is confirmed. The Turkes incline to deliver upp our English slaves, and to enter into amity with us. The Excise to be laide [on] Ireland and Scotland is almost perfected. The setting a militia in every countie hath taken upp much time all this weeke, and is neere finishing. G. M.

*Westminster, June 2, 1655.*—The Court of Upper Bench *1. 95.* granted an al[ia] Habeas Corpus to Mr. Coney (error being found in the former), which was fil'd on Saturday last, and judgment should have bin Monday last given thereupon, but deferred till the first day of the next terme. The 3 lawyers committed to the Tower have petitioned for liberty, acknowledging and being sorrowfull for their erreure, but yet his Highnesse hath done nothing therein. Monday last the Lord Commissioners of the Great Seale came of the Court into the Exchequer, and the Lord Whitelock made a learned speech to Recorder Steele (who was then to bee sworne Lord Cheefe Barron of the Court), shewing the authority, reason, and justice of the lawes of England, the trust reposed in him by calling him to that place, and his ability and knowledge in the law to execute it, and after a short seld denyeing answer hee was sworne. Instruccions and Commission were dispatch for the



Militia forces, who are to take an engagement to bee true and faithfull to his Highnesse. They are to bee ready at 18 howers warning, and if above a month out together, then to have the stablished pay of the army. The Captain hath 100<sup>li</sup> per annum, Lieutenant 50<sup>li</sup>, Cornet 25<sup>li</sup>, Quartermaster 13<sup>li</sup> 6<sup>s</sup> 8<sup>d</sup>, each of the three Corporalls 2<sup>li</sup>, Trumpeters 5<sup>li</sup> 6<sup>s</sup> 1<sup>d</sup>, each souldjour 8<sup>li</sup>.

Colonel Humphreyes commands 1000 men, which with 12 saile are going as a supply to the West Indies. The Lord Henry goes not this month for Ireland. The Councill of Scotland intends to set forward the latter end of the next weeke. Little Mr. Graves (his saide) will bee made Recorder in the City in the place of Mr. Steele. His Highnesse sending for the Lord Mayre Thursday last, and the Judges the next day about businesse of greate concernement, caused many to come downe to Westminster in greate expectation that his Highnesse would alter his title, but hee being gone to Hampton Court, they thinke it may probably bee on Thursday next.

G. M.

1. 96. *London, June 9.*—The ratification of the peace with Sweden being seald his Highnesse hath appointed Mr. Rolt, a gentleman that attends his Highnesse person, to carry the said ratificacion to Sweden. Colomel Fines hath received his pattent for being Lord Privy Seale, but is not yet sworne. The Lord Lambert is made Lord Warden of the Cinque Portes, but Colonel Sydenham is not yet made Lord Treasurer as reported. His Highnesse hath knighted Mr. Coplston the High Sheriffe of Devonshire, and gave him the sword he knighted him with for his activenesse against the late eruptours at Salisbury, and hath given 200<sup>li</sup> per annum to Captain Croke whoe suppressed and tooke that party. His Highnes hath given Lieutenant Colonel Talbot comission to command the regiment late Colonel Ahreds.<sup>1</sup> Thursday last the Lord Cheife Justice Rolles gave in his pattent to his Highnesse. Friday sevennight one of the Masters of Requests was by his Highnesse

<sup>1</sup> See *Crolych's Chronicle*, letters xcxiij. and xciv.



and Councell (at the request of the city) nominated Recorder. The Prince of Transilvanias agent hath received his dispatch, and is preparing homewards. His Highnesse [h]is assuming the legislative power in some cases of necessity, and in the intervalls of Parliament, [and] the altering of his title is much spoken of. The former is generally said to bee agreed upon. Yesterday morning the Lords Commissioners of the Greate Seale delivered up the Greate Seale to his Highnesse, according to his Highnesse command. The Advocate Generall, or Lord Whitlock (it's said), wilbe Lord Keeper, and Serjant Glyn Lord Cheife Justice of the Upper Bench, and that the Lord Richard Cromwell wilbe made Lord High Admirall is generally reported, and the Lord Henry Cromwell Deputy of Ireland. The Spanishe Ambassadour hath this day sent [for leave to] bee gone. On Munday the fleet are to bee drawne out which are to goe for the West Indies, and the shippes are in readinesse to receive them on board. There are lettres come that the third provision ship is arrived at Barbadoes, and that the 4th was in the sight of the Island.

The army under General Venables is already 10,000 besides seamen. The last night the Lord Willoughby, Jeffrey Palmer, Lord Lovelace, Orlando Bridgeman, and Colonel Ayres and divers others were apprehended and sent to the Tower. The Lord Bradshaw hath bene twice sent for to the Councell for not paying his sesse; Prayse God Barebones and some others alsoe refuse it. Mr. Tombes whoe was heire to Sir Paul Pindar's estate hath lately hang'd himselfe.

*Westminster, June 16, 1655.*—The souldjory in Ireland have t. 98. the last weeke taken possession of their lands in that nation according to each of their lotts. The forces drawne out of each regiment to compleate a regiment for the West Indies were put on board Monday last, soe that the fleet wilbee speedily under saile. The Spanishe Ambassadour (that lately came hether) hath taken an amicable leave of his Highnesse, being remanded back by his Master. Yesterday the Lord Henry Cromwell being accompanied



out of towne with many persons of quallity [set out for Ireland]. Serjant Glyn is made Lord Cheefe Justice instead of the Lord Rolls. The old Greate Seale is broken, and Colonel Fines and Lord Lisle sitt as Lords Commissioners of the new Greate Seale, which hath this sircumscripcion: Oliverus Dei gratia, Angliae, Scotiae, Hiberniae, &c. Protector, with the armes of England, Scotland, France, and Ireland, and his owne in the midst of them, and on the other side his owne effigies mounted on horse back. This day many persons of quallity were brought in prisoners out of severall counties. Mr. Lenthall is nominated Master of the Rolls. Mr. Carey of Haberd[ash]ers Hall and one Mr. Knight are nominated two of the Judges for Ireland.

- t. 99. *Westminster, June 23, 1655.*—The Commissioners of the Militia in the severall counties have secured the persons of most of the Malignant nobility and gentry of this nation till their Militia be settled. After evening sermon the last Lord's day a colleccion was made from howse to howse, the contriбуtions were large, privat gentlemen, nay some tradesmen, subscribed 10<sup>li</sup>, others 20<sup>li</sup> a peece. Sir William Constable who died in the Strand was solemnly interr'd Thursday last in Westminster Abbey after the military manner, most of the officers of the army in and nere London attending his corpes to the place of interment . . . Yesterday letters were brought to his Highnesse, importing that our fleete had landed in Hispaniola all the forces under comand of Generall Venables, without the least opposition of the Spanyard or other inhabitants, and that when our forces entered their cheefe city, Sancto Domingo, they found not any people therin, being fled (as it is conceived) to the woods upon our first landing. We expect a more particular account hereof daily from Generall Penn. The Lords of the protestant Cantons of Switzerland have sent deputies to demand of the Duke of Savoy a debt of ij millions of crownes, and in case hee give not a satisfactory answer to declare that they intend to pay themselves as they can finde opportunity.

- t. 100. *Westminster, July 11, 1655.*—From Tunis the merchants have





letter, that our shippes are trading there with very great freedome. His Highnesse and Councill have appointed Judges for the severall Courts of Justice in Ireland, vizt. Miles Corbet Esqr., Lord Chiefe Baron, Mr. Cary Barron of the Exchequer, Mr. Pepis Lord Chiefe Justice of the Common Pleas, Mr. Cooke Justice of the Upper Bench, Mr. Lowther Lord Chiefe Justice, and Mr. Doniland Justice of the Common Pleas, and the affaires of the Greate Seale to be managed by the Lord Chiefe Baron Corbet, Lord Pepis, and Lord Lowther: such of these as are of the Councill of Ireland will continue to act in both capacities. An Ambassadour extraordinary from Venice is commeing hither. The G[r]and Signiour's causing the throates of the English Ambassadour and all the English merchants to be cut, and their estates to be confiscated, amounting to 18 millions of crownes (in revenge of Generall Blake's burning the 9 men of warre of Tunis), is againe confirmed by letters from the Duke of Savoy's Court. Yesterday his Highnes sent for all the Judges to Whitehall, wheare hee gave them a very learned chardge before they entred upon their severall Councils. His Highnesse hath given orders that the Commissioners for givinge reliefe upon articles should cease to sitt or act further upon the powers given to them, by which meanes the Lord Bradshaw is out of his last publique employment. The Cavaleires postinge out of the towne Thursday last makes the citt-ens complaine already for want of tradinge, and will speedily indanger many purses upon the roads: most of them that staid contrarie to the proclamation are since secured, and wish they had departed. The Lord Henry is gott safe to Ireland. Wee have heard nothinge from Generall Blake or Penn. His Highnesse is gone to Hampton Court.

*Westminster, July 19, 1655.*—A young gent was Thursday last brought before His Highnes and Councell suspected to bee the Duke of Glocester, but hee proving to bee another was the next day discharged. His Highnes hath sent letters to all the Sheriffs in England and Wales to returne the names of the parishes in their Shirrifedomes, soe that hee may know which of them have



neglected to send up their contributions for the poore protestants in Savoy. His Highnesse hath sent his order to reduce every foote regiment of 1000 to 800, and those of horse proportionably, by the 23th instant, and to pay their supernumeraries till then, and the Treasury shall repay them here.

- f. 107b. *Westminster, July 21, 1655.*—The newes from Generall Pen's fleet is, that our army is landed without any losse in Hispaniola in a healthy and good condition, onely that Majour Generall Haynes by a rash and unadvised attempt with seaven men against the enemy hath lost his life. The Councill of Scotland theire instructions are ingrossed and signed by his Highnesse, soe that they wilbee in readinesse within 11 dayes tyme to set forward thither. Hannam that hath bin an highway man these twenty yeares last past, and hath gott a considerable estate by that trade, was this Sessions condemned, but upon reasons advantageous to the publique is since reprived. The Swedish Ambassadour extraordinary with above 100 attendants hath landed at Gravesend these 7 dayes last past, his coach horses and other necessities being not yet come a shoare. The Scoutmaster Generall, Mr. Downeing, is nominated publicly agent for the Switzers, and wilbee dispatcht away very speedily. G. M.

- f. 109. *Westminster, August 1, 1655.*—Upon the Swedish Ambassadors first coming off from Tower Hill, the French Ambassadour ambitiously interposed with his coach the next to that of his Highnesse, pretending hee tooke the Swedish Ambassadors coach to bee the Spanish Ambassadors, who (to prevent a quarrell betweene the French Ambassadour and him in point of precedency) absented himselfe that day, but that mistake being rectified, the lacques and attendants on both sides put upp their swords, and the Sweedish Ambassadour's coach tooke his right place. His Highnesse hath impowered severall Commissioners in Jersey to sequester the estates of all the inhabitants thereof, unlesse they pay a fine imposed upon them for their delinquencies by a day certaine. Tuis-day last the Sweedish Ambassadour had audience at Whitehall



in much state. Hee was onely upon generalls at present, for amitie, union, and good correspondency between the two nations. His 2d audience was Wednesday last, and then hee was more perticular, but the substance thereof is thought fitt to bee kept privat. The instruccions for the Councill of Scotland being perfected, many of the members are gone downe, and the rest going daily. The Lord Deputy Fleetwood is uppon a speedy voyage for England, lodgings in White hall beeing preparing for him. The report of Generall Blake his takeing 12 Sally men of warr is confirmed. The officers of the new Militia troopes in the severall counties were yesterday feasted by his Highnesse at White hall. The Cavalleare partie now under restraint hath taken up much debate, and for their allowing 10<sup>li</sup> per annum out of every 100<sup>li</sup> per annum for maintenance of the new Militia troopes (who are raised onely for the safety of the nation against that partie) is not yet fullie determined. Letters came this day from Generall Venables, that hee had taken the Island of Jamica in the West Indias, where they had not onely the benefitt of fresh provisions, but<sup>1</sup> wilhee inabled thereby to relieve dizines and indisposition of the land forces occasioned by a sea voyage, which sayes (this letter) was the sole cause why our 2 parties under Bemis and Jackson could not stand the charge of the enemy at their first landing,<sup>2</sup> wherein hee assured his Highnesse that the losse of neere 250 was the whole number of that miscarriage, and that after a few weekes refreshment in this Island hee doubts not but to give his Highnesse a good account of St. Dominigo and the greatest part of Hispaniola.

*August 11, 1655.*—Friday last His Highnesse made Sir Gilbert Pickering Lord Chamberlaue, and appointed Sir Thomas Billingsley, Mr. Rolt, Mr. Barrington, and Mr. Harv-y, to bee Gentlemen of his Bedchamber. Mr. Winslow, one of the Commissioners that went with Generall Venables, is dead of the country dis-sease, and likewise Clarke, who was Lieutenant Collonell to Majour Generall Hayne. Our fress wanted water some dayes before they landed in

<sup>1</sup> The MS. here inserts: 'being part of Hispaniola.'

<sup>2</sup> This is now en c, as they had been many days on shore.



Hispaniola, but are now well supplied with all accomodation, Generall Penn having left with them fower monthes provisions, and the like quantity for the 12 best shippes that staies and attends the movements<sup>1</sup> and designes of our land forces, for the rest of the floete, noe further occasion being there for them, will bee imployed upon the service. Our losse in Hispaniola by the ambuscade of the enemy expences not the number of 250 men (as all letters confirme). A petition is carryeing on in severall places here for his Highnesse to assume the title of Emperoure or King, the subscription[s] will bee many, but there is not any of them yet presented to his Highnesse who went to Hampton Court Thursday night last; . . . Information being given that many of the Royall party, and some of them persons of quallity and others of very desperate condition, did lurke privately in London and Westminster contrary to the late proclamation of his Highnesse and Councill, order was given that strict search should bee made for them by constables of the severall parishes, which accordingly was executed on Thursday night last, and many persons apprehended thereupon, and since committed. The Lord President and most of the Councill of Scotland begin their journey for Scotland the next weeke. That the Lord Deputy Fleetwood is made Generallissimo of all the forces in the 3 nations signifies at present noe more then a common report. G. M.

*August 13, 1655.*—Dundee in Scotland is ordered to bee disgarrison'd, whereby an equall redcement is made of all the Governours pay in Scotland. Sincere is ordered to bee made a guarison. A printed [petition] in the name of the freeholders of England, desiring his Highnesse to assume the title of King, or Emperour, and (till the next Parliament bee called) the legislative power of the nation, was offered by some persons, Monday last, to merchants and others then upon the Exchange to be signed by them, but they not understanding the danger thereof refused. His Highnesse and Councill have since thought fit to give order for

<sup>1</sup> MS. Chron. 1.





calling in and suppressing the said petition.<sup>1</sup> A Greate Seale is lately sent into Ireland, where as well as in Scotland the greate businesse hath bin soe to reduce the forces in both nacions as to bring them within the pay of both nations of the new establishment. The Sweeds greate victory over the Powlanders is confirmed, which made the Sweedish Ambassadour to set yesterday apart for a day of thankes giving, and the greatest preparations for fire workes was made that ever were seene in England. They were performed both by land and water, but because much danger was apprehended by the inhabitants in firing their howses the best part of the more curious workes were forborne. A greate dinner was made, at which the French and Dutch Ambassadors, the Lord Whitelock, and severall other persons of honour was present. The Lord Protector was not invited (as the common report goes). 3 hogshheads of clarret wyne run out at severall spouts which was free for the vulger to receive. The disbanding of 20 of each company of foote in the 3 nations is over; if they had bin formed into regiments most of them would have bin ingaged for the West Indias, but blessed bee God noe need is there of them. Generall Blacke is yet in the Straites, and waites there to good purpose, if the Spaniards Silver fleete have not received a prohibition to saile out of poart till further order. The sending 20,000 English to joyne with the Sweeds army hath bin debated, but not yet concluded. The Lord Deputy Fleetwood intends to bee heere by the 10th of the next month; some say hee will bee made Lord Treasurer imedeately upon his coming over, others that hee will have a Marshall command. His Highnesse went to Hampton Court Thursday night last, it is a place where hee takes much delight.

G. M.

*W. Amiester, August 25, 1655.*—The Lord Henry Cromwell was the last weeke enterteyned by the University of Duddin, being their Chancellor, with very greate solemnity. Hee was met at the

<sup>1</sup> This petition, which was drawn up by a certain John Norbury, is given at length in the *Calendar of Domestic State Papers, 1655*, p. 277.



outward gate by the Vice-Chancellor, Provost of Trinity Colledge, and Docter Dudley Loftus, publieque professor of the Civill Lawes, with many Docters, were all robed in scarlet, who with the rest of the Graduates attended his Lordship into the Convocation House, where hee had their congratulatory salutation from the mouth of Dr. Rowles, which ended the Procter made another speech in order to phylosophy, after which Dr. Loftus as Docter of the Chaire presented Colonel Saakey to the Chanceller to bee admitted *ad eundem gradum*. Hee likewise presented (after another eloquent oration) Sir Hardris Waller, Sir John Reynolds, Sir George Ascue, Sir Timothy Tirill, and the Lord President of Connaught, and after severall other orations Mr. Georges, the Lord Henry Cromwell's Secretary, by command from his Lordship closed with a very eloquent speech to the University in congratulating the learned performance of the day. Afterwards the Docters and many persons of quality attended his Lordship and Councill unto the Provost's Lodgings, where they were entertained with a plentiful banquet. His Lordship by countenancing the interest of the magistracy and ministry, coming to their public ordinances both at lectures and on the Lord's day, doth gaine much upon their affections. The Lord Lambert, Generall Desbrow, Collonel Goff, Comissary Generall Whalley, Lord Deputy Fleetwood, Majour Generall Skippon, Lieutenant Colouel Worseley, and Lientenant Colouel Kelsey are appointed Commanders in Cheefe of the new Militia forces in the severall counties, which are devided amongst the said officers who are all coming upp to receive farther orders. Thursday last his Highnesse and Councill set apart for a day of Humiliation to seeke God for seasonable weather, which is much wanted in the Nations. . . . His Highnesse and Councill sat yesterday night till almost 8 of the clock; their results are kept private.

f. 118. *Westminster, September 1, 1655.*—The businesse of Mr. Cordwall (the Minister that preaches downe the ministry of the nation) because it is very much taken notice of, his Highnesse hath taken the examination thereof upon him-selfe, and in the interim



the Tryers forbear any further persecucion against him. The Lord Howard having waved his command of a regiment of horse [is] to continue his command of the life-guard. His regiment of horse was this weeke given to Collonell Ingoldsby.<sup>1</sup> . . . Mr. Sturghion, one of his Highnesse life guard and pastour of a Church, is in custody for being the author and publisher of the printed Queries lately published in dishonour of his Highnesse and present Government.<sup>2</sup> The Lord Deputy of Ireland is expected Saturday next at Chester, and within few dayes at Woodstock, where hee staves some short time before hee come to London. His Highnesse and Councill is drawing up a declaration shewing their dislike of the late printed petition in the name of the freeholders for constituting his Highnesse King or Emperer. His Highnesse hath bin in a course of physick the greatest part of this weeke, and hath bin troubled with severall fits of the stone, whereby noe personall application hath bin made to him. Yesternight his Highnesse tooke good repose, but his [in]disposition prevented his journey this day to Hampton Court. The last night the Countesse of Holland died, when Sir William Roberts was wounded and his sone slaine by theeves neere Tyburne. This day came in 20 odd saile of our flecte from Jamaica, 13 being left there, and one fired accidentally coming home. Generall Penn<sup>3</sup> died the day before they set saile.

G. M.

*London, September 8, 1655.*—Though his Highnesse hath received f. 120. much ease and rest since Munday last, yet the Councill will not yet trouble him with the least of business. The coaches, horses, and other goods belonging to the Lord Deputy of Ireland landed at Chester Monday, his person and retinue are there daily expected.

<sup>1</sup> Howard had been given the regiment lately Colonel Rich's, which now passed to Ingoldsby.

<sup>2</sup> See Tharloe, iii. 738, and the life of Sturgeon in the *Dictionary of National Biography*.

<sup>3</sup> Evidently a mistake for General Venables, whose death was confidently reported.



and Wallingford House over against Scotland yard in Whitehall is already prepared to receive his Lordships. Generall Pen came upp yesterday from the West Indias flecte, and gave his Highnesse a full account of that expedition, and of the advantage Jamica (if continued in our possession) will bee to England; wee saved 200 men out of the shipp *Paragon* that was burnt, and about 80 more destroyed by water and fire. The excessive raines wee have lately had have brought the price of corne above double of what it was three weekes agoe.

G. M.

f. 130. *Sept. 13, 1655.*—Generall Blake is now in London, Generall Monck and Sir George Aysene are said to bee Generalls by sea and land for the West Indies. The Lady Claypoole (though reported to bee dead) is in a hopeful way of recovery . . .

f. 127b. *September 15, 1655.*—The Anabaptist partie in Ireland are much offended with the Lord Henry Cromwell coming every Lords day to parochiall (?) and publique congregation, and with his chaplaines for preaching against dipping.

*London, September 22.*—This weeke came the sad news of the Spaniards seizing uppon all our shippes in their ports, our merchants' persons, and all their goods. His Highnesse is well recovered, and hath removed his family from Hampton Court till next Summer. Wednesday night the Spanish merchants came to his Highnes, and gave him an account of this seizure, humbly desiring that hee would please to use some meanes for their reliefe. His Highnesse tould him hee would reinforce Jamica with an additionall army, and that hee was confident thereby to repaire their losses twenty fould; this answer hath given greate

f. 129. satisfaction [to] the merchants who had six monthes notice of this designe, whereby they might have withdrawne or secured their estates. The additionall army it is said will consist of 10,000 men. Thersday morning Generall Vennables came from Portsmouth by land, Generall Pen and himselfe with Collonel Buller were all that afternoone under examination at the Councill, and it





being found that Collonell Buller came over by order from the Commissioners of the place, and that the other two came over without order, the two Generals, Venables and Pen, were that night sent prisoners to the Tower, where they now remayne. His Highnesse hath bestowed Collonell Ingoldby[s] late regiment of foote uppon Lieutenant Collonell Mills. All the considerable shippes at Portsmouth that wee can speedily hasten to Generall Blake are fitting out: the Spanish fleet is yet playing to and froo of the southward Cape, waiteing for their Silver fleet. A proclamation is past to disable all delinquents in the late eruption as well as those in any of the former rebellions to beare office in the Commonwealth, or give voyce to elect or bee elected Members of Parliament. Severall orders are past the Councill to regulate the presse, and to surpresse all weekley printed bookes unlesse such as are allowed by his Highnesse and Councill, which will bee few or none at all. This day the Lord Deputy of Ireland with his big belly Lady came to towne, attended with his Highnesse Councill and many officers of the army.

G. MARBOTT.

*Sept. 29.*---His Highnesse this weeke answered the petitioners on behalf of Biddle (when they pleaded the Instrument of Government did maintaine Liberty of Conscience), that the Instrument was never intended to maintaine and protect blasphemers from the punishment of the lawes in force against them, neither would bee. His Highnesse likewise left Mr. Cordwell, the minister, to bee concluded by the Tryers of London. . . . Yesterday they<sup>1</sup> ordered that Mr. Feake & Mr. Rogers should bee removed from Winsor Castle to the Isle of Wight, because of their clamorous inveyings against his Highnesse and government. His Highnesse lately tould the wife of Lient. Collonell Lilburne, that by the first shipp that came over from Jersey her husband should bee brought over into England. The Spanish Ambassador (seeing the designe of Jamaica so vigorously reinford't) presses hard for an audience, but it will not bee granted. . . .

<sup>1</sup> *I.e.* the Council of State.



Narrative of the Expedition to San Domingo <sup>1</sup>

L. 122.

After our departure from Portsmouth on the 26th of December 1654, wee arrived att Beadadoes the 30th of January following, and on the 2d <sup>2</sup> of March the whole fleet set saile from the Barbadoes, and after the receiving of such forces as were raised on the Leeward Island, wee sailed for Hispaniola. About the 19th of April our fleet came before S<sup>to</sup> Domingo at five o'clock. After some small stay some gunns were fired as signalls, whereupon the fleet parted, the greatest part making sayle alongst the shoare till the evening, and then came to an anchor, (Colonell Bullere with his owne and parte of another regiment staying before the towne). The next morning <sup>3</sup> very early wee began to land our men without any appearance of opposition, but it was not ere long before the army was in a marching posture, yet wee marched some two miles to a Savanna (an open place of grownd soe called by the Spaniards), where our army encamped that night, bringing with us ashore three dayes provision, and a sufficient proportion of ammunition. The next morning after some tyme spent in prayer, and in putting the army in good order wee began our march, our men as to all outward appearence being in good heart and cheerefull. About noone tyme the vanguard met with some 16 of the enemy, which was supposed to bee all cow-killers; they had a small encounter two of our men being kild, and some other slightly wounded, and one of the enemy kild, whereupon they took the woods, and were not seene by us afterwards. Wee marcht land all day till darke night, during which march wee were in very much want of water, in soe much that severall men dyed. The next day early the army began to march (our regiment <sup>4</sup> leading the vanguard); I was commanded to lead the forlorne of a 100 men. About 3 a clock there came to mee a sea man who swam on shoare, and gave mee notice that Colonel Bullard was landed that morning at Mine Bay (a place soe called by the

<sup>1</sup> Undated. It appears in the MSS. between letters of 11 and 15 Sept. 1655, when it came to hand, but it was evidently written about June.

<sup>2</sup> Really March 30.

<sup>3</sup> Saturday, April 14.

<sup>4</sup> C. A. Fortescue's.



Spaniards), some 5 miles from S.<sup>to</sup> Domingo, and marcht up to meete us in the way. I presently returned and gave the Generall an account of it, whereuppon the Generall gave command to march, and coming to a Savana and being nere night the Generall resolved to lodge the army there, and commanded mee to the campe with the forlorne; onely Jackson with 3 files of my forlorne, and my Lieutenant were ordered to seek out a passage over the River Hine,<sup>1</sup> which they accordingly found, and met with a neger who inleavoured to run away [but] was by the party kill'd, newse being brought thereof to the Generall immediately a party of 150 of each regiment was set to secure the passe. The next morneing early the army marchd to the river, and there waded over, it being betwixt 3 and 4 foote deepe, afterwards marching about two miles the army rendezvouz'd some two howers to get our men upp together, the badnesse of the passage haveing put the army in disorder. Afterwards marching about a mile further where wee had plenty of water at a plantation, our regiment being in the reare was there ordered to stay. Our Collonel,<sup>2</sup> and Majour Generall Haynes stayed with us; the rest of the army marchd forwards and afterwards joyned with Collonell Buller, and drawing negro to the towne hapned to fall into an ambuscado of the enemies, which by reason of the suddennesse of the accident put our men into some disorder, and thereby haveing advantage of our men had for a small tyme the better of it; but the sea regiment marchiing upp the enemy presently returned and fled, and after some firing of theire cannon in a small worke our men still marchiing forward, the enemy threw the gunns into a well adjoyneing to the said fort, and with rubbish spoileing the water quitted the fort, which our men tooke possession of. There was then an expresse command given (as I was credibly informed) not to march forward without orders from the Generall. About the close of the evening<sup>3</sup> wee came upp with the army, where wee had not bin about halfe an owre but wee had orders to draw off, and march back to the

<sup>1</sup> Jaina.<sup>2</sup> Apparently Fortescue.<sup>3</sup> Tuesday, April 17.



plantation we last came from, which was about fower miles. The onely cause I could understand was want of water, which our shippes (if there had bin no other way) could with speed have conveyed to us, if wee had marched forward beyond one other stone fort the enemy had close adjoyning to the sea which was in force and bignesse much like to one of the lesser castles in the Downes onely the middle was squire built. I could not perceiue that there was above 10 or 12 gunns at most in it, when I had uppon our second attempt a faire view of it. But the army as aforesaid being ordered to draw off wee found a generall unwillingnesse in our souldjourns to the same; and in our owne regiment (who then least wanted water) many of our old fellow souldjourns, with whome wee had for many yeare past bin together with, came to severall of us, and desired us to speake to our cheefe officers that they might stay, and those that wanted water might goe back and refresh themselves, saying they had rather suffer there than leave their wounded fellow souldjers to the mercy of the enemy, which wee being sensible of that there was noe conveniency to carry them soe farr in the night, severall of us went to our then Lieutenant Collonel Hill,<sup>1</sup> and desired him that hee would then acquainte our Collonel or the Generall with the same, which hee did. Wee had this answer returned that wee were not to dispute commands, but to obey orders (whereto wee submitted). In this incounter wee lost our principall guide with about 50 more kil'd, and many wounded by gulls.<sup>2</sup> I suppose there was twenty of the enemy kil'd. The next day in the afternoone the army marched to Hine Bay (a place soe called some five miles from St. Domingo), where the army lay five dayes, during which tyme wee got another peece, to drakes,<sup>3</sup> some musketts in frames, and victualled the army. To the best of my remembrance it was during the time of the armies being at Hines-Bay that the enemy came downe

<sup>1</sup> Major Will Hill of Lord Cornwalles's regiment, who probably became its Lieutenant-Colonel when Holdip was promoted to command the St. Kitt's regiment.

<sup>2</sup> So in MS. ('by gulls')

<sup>3</sup> *I.e.* 'A mortar peece: two drakes.'





with about 100 men, and fell in upon our maine guard, and had they not bin accidentally discovered by a stragling souldjour had undoubtedly defeated the whole guard, but they being strengthened by commanded parties gadding abroad for forrage incoutered the enemy, killed their commander, put the partie to flight, killed some eight or thereabouts, tooke noe prisoners.<sup>1</sup> After five dayes as aforessaid the army began their march abt out noone, and by reason of a very narrow passage the men marched not above two miles, and soe lay in a marching posture all night. The next morning<sup>2</sup> we marched (the same forlorne goeing before both dayes consisting of 500 men, which forlorne Adjutant Generall Jackson had the leading of), and soe marched forward till they came to the foresaid stone fort, and (as our relation was) were marched past the fort, when as an Ambuscado issued forth of the woode, and after the receiueing of our forlorne's valley of shott fell in upon them with theire lances, and immediatly put them to the roote, and [they] running back upon our owne men, put two reformed companies and that parte of the horse that were in the van to the roote, who in disorder brooke in upon the Generall's regiment, in soemuch that they became thereby a prey to the enemy, untill they were put to a checque (as I am informed) by the Generall with a small party of Majour Generall Haynes and Collonel Goodson's regiment. The losse upon this defeat received was eight feild colloures. (five of the Generall's, one of the Majour Generalls, and two reformed colloures). Majour Generall Haynes, Majour [Ferguson], and three Captaines more of his regiment with severall other officers and above 400 souldjers were slayne, many more wounded; in which miscarriage [Jackson] had his sword broake over his heade, and was casheard the army. After this losse received there was 100 men out of each regiment commanded forth to march forward and to take possession of the ground wee had then left, in which party I was commanded with 100 men. Majour Bland<sup>3</sup> com-

<sup>1</sup> See *Penn's Life*, ii. 86.

<sup>2</sup> Wednesday, May 25.

<sup>3</sup> Of Col. Buller's regiment. This seems to show that the author of this narrative was merely a captain.



manded the whole partie. Wee marched upp within musket shot of the fort, and were there commanded to stay, and waited in expectation of orders to march forward to the towne of S<sup>to</sup>. Domingo till the next morneing at 7 of the clock, during which time the enemy did us greate harne with their greate shott. Wee were then releevd by a party of 150 out of a regiment commanded by Lieutenant Collonell Hill which wee had thought should have marched on, but being drawne of to ovr severall regiments wee found the army marching of, and they left as a reare guard. The army marched that day to Hine Bay, the enemy in noe wise approaching in the reare, but before halfe the army could bee gotten on to the Bay there was many men left the roade about a mile from the said place to fetch water, who uppon suddaine apprehension of feare amongst themselves, supposed they saw sunn negars, which caused a generall flight amongst them, and throwing away of their armes, they being at least a 100 men then present at the water, and noe enemy really appeareing. About two or three dayes after this, uppon a rumer that a partie of men (who had bin sent from the camp to get victualls) were begirt in a Church by the enemy (which was a false report), another party of 7 files were sent by an outeguard to rescue them commanded by a Lieutenant, who marching towards the said Church were fac'd by the enemy with horse and foote, whereuppon the whole party fled notwithstanding the indeavours of the officers to stay them, it being afterwards proved against one of the partie that hee was twice knockt downe by a Serjaunt for running away, for which fact hee was hang'd. After this there was nothing of any action considerable. About 3 or 4 dayes after the army was imbarked againe for the Island of Jamica. The whole time the army was on Hispaniola was 19 or 20 dayes. On the 10th of May the whole flecte came to an anchor in the harbour of Jamica, and boated upp our men, and sailed upp to their place of landing, where the enemy had some few best workes and gunns; [we] were anchored with our boates and the Martin galley and severall



other small vessells till all the boats of the fleet were come upp to us, and then let slipp, and drove ashore, and landed our army without any further opposition, which put sum small appearance of carriage into the spirits of our discourag'd army. The next day wee marched upp to the cheefe citty. In the way thether was a small fort with three gunns and a murtherer, which the enemy after once firing quitted and fled, and alsoe quitted the citty, but seem'd very desirous to treate with us, which was by us well liked for as much as wee had little encouragement to have any farther dependance on the valloer of our souldjourns, the sence of theire former cowardice (?)<sup>1</sup> being fresh in our mindes. The treaty proceeded soe farr as a conclusion and rattification of articles. The enemy had time limitted for their coming in, and the Marshall De Camp, who was the second man in power in the Island, [was] to bring them in, and [we to] keepe theire Governour with us, the army then quartering in the cheefe towne; but before the limitation was expired a souldjour of the army stragling abroad hapned into the enemyes quarters, and gave them a full account of our being defeated in Hispaniola (for which fault hee was hanged), where-uppon the enemy fell off from the Articles of peace to Articles of hostility, and did much spoile uppon our souldjourns stragling abroad in the countrey to get cassader to make breade<sup>2</sup> (of which the army was in greate neede). Soe after this there was a commanded party out of each regiment of the best souldjourns, consisting of above 2500, to march westward into the countrey (part of which went by sea), to finde out the enemies and engage them if they could appeare, or else force them out of any habitable parts of the countrey, which partie after haveing bin forth ner a fortnith returned, haveing done little more then onely foraged the countrey, and taken about 20 prisoners, of which 2 were English men left there by Captain Jackson in his expedition.<sup>3</sup> After this another partie was sent forth, who remained 15 miles from the citty in plantacions. Afterwards little of actions, onely the army was divided by regiments

<sup>1</sup> In MS. 'counly.'<sup>2</sup> I.e. 'cassava.'<sup>3</sup> In 1612(?).



into severall quarters of the habitable parts of the countrey to plant guarrisons. The enemy kept the woods and mountaines, and were to the best of my intelligence about three or 1000 of all sorts, not above 700 Spaniards, the rest Malatoes and negers. Our army consisted of 6000 at least (the sea regiment being on ship-board), of which about 500 were sick and unable for service, and very bad accomodacion for them.<sup>1</sup>

### Extracts from Newsletters. 1655

*Westminster, Oct. 20, 1655.*—The fleet under the command of Generall Penne is paid off, and £100,000 more will pay off Generall Blakes fleet. His Highnesse hath desired the loan of £80000(?) from the City upon good security, which they will answer his Highnesse in . . . Our West India business goes on with all vigor and resolution, soe much being expressed in a privat fast kept Thursday last by his Highnesse for that very purpose.

- f. 137. *October 27, 1655.*—The Spanish Ambassadour, having soe often demanded audience and nott prevayling, hath his passport given him, against which hee excepts as being defective in matter of forme, extending onely to his portientler person and not to his servants and goods, and further for that therein hee is cited as hee was, late Ambassadors *quidam formam*; and because hee accounts it too much beneath his honour to make his addresse on his owne behaffe, hee hath prevail'd with the Venitian Ambassadour to doe it for him, (viz.) to effect the renovacion and alteration of his passport. Lieutenant Colonel Jo. Lilburne came to Dover in order (as is conceived) to bee brought neere. All our merchant shippes are come from Antwerpe fearing the imbargo would bee in force there. A petition from the protestant inhabitants in Ireland for the makeing the Lord Henry Cromwell Lord Lieutenant of Ireland

<sup>1</sup> This narrative was evidently written by an officer in Fortescue's regiment, and probably by one of its captains, but the new-letters contain no evidence as to its authorship. It should be compared with the documents printed in Granville Penn's *Memoirs of Sir William Penn*, the latter, on the Jamaica expedition in Thurloe, and the accounts printed in the Appendix.





will soone bee brought over to his Highnesse by their agent designing for that purpose. The peace with France was finally concluded and sealed Wednesday night last, by the commissioners appointed on the behalfe of his Highnesse [and] by the Lord Ambassador from France.

*November 8, 1655.*—Col. Harvie, one of the Commissioners of the Customes is committed to the Tower the Councill hath already discovered about £30,000 of which hee hath cheated the State, and did manage the businesse of the Customes wholly, and Col. Langham his brother in law, one of the Treasurers of the Customes, and some others in consequence with him. Mr. Feake being brought to Hampshire out of the Isle of Wight by two troopers into a towne where hee was to stay, and being not strictly kept there, hee ran away directly for London, saying hee would obey no order but forthwith into France. . . . f. 138b.

*November 10.*—Mr. Feake is by order of his Highnesse and Council released from his imprisonment. . . .

*November 17.*—Col. Prides regiment are marched into Kent; its thought all the regiments wil bee equally divided into the severall counties for the safety thereof. Munday last a committee was appointed to consider of abuses in the sale of Deanes & Chapterlands, they being generally returned by corruption [of] survayors (?) at a 3rd of the number of acres, and not above a moiety of the true values or old rents before the late warrs. . . . f. 143.

*December 1, 1655.*—A new modell is lately drawne by Mr. Shepard, an able lawyer, for setting provinciall courts throughout the whole nation and a register in every county; it is presented to his Highnesse and Councill, and soe well approved that its thought generally (after some alterations) it will be put into practise before Easter terme next. This much startles the lawyers and the City. . . . f. 147b.

*December 11.*—Wee are yett in the examination of the late designe of Halsall and others, and have in custody and in our power five of those who were particularly designed to assassinate f. 149.



my Lord Protector, and other there are which depended upon this, but this to bee done in the first place, as that which was so necessary as all would miscarry without itt. J. T.<sup>1</sup>

- f. 150. *December 15.*—Lieut.-Colonel John Lilburne hath lately by three severall letters sent to an eminent Quaker in London, demonstrated him selfe upon what grounds and reasons hee is most pleased with and converted to owne and practise that religion of Quakers, but being stept into it of a suddaine they are resolved to bring him back againe, and shewing<sup>2</sup> the crosse, which if he will take upp with them they will then owne him. . . .
- f. 151b. *December 22, 1655.*—A most invective and scandalous declaration was drawne upp by some discoranted persons in Wales, setting downe the severall Remonstrances of the Army, charging his Highnesse with the breach thereof, and calling him a perjured person and apostate etc. Cornet Day, Mr. John Sympson, and others had the impudence to reade it in Allhalloes at a meeting of above 500 people, but Day is secured, and Sympson escaped very narrowly. Vavasor Powell is likewise in custody concerning it. . . . Lieut.-Colonel Biscoe hath the regiment late Sir William Constable's given to him.

### Extracts from Newsletters, 1656

- f. 153. *January 1, 1656.*—His Highnesse being more and more threatened and endangered of late by a new intended designe of the royalist party then formerly, 12 of the most faithfull valiant and proper souldiers in each regiment of horse (to the number of 150) are ordered to be added as a guard for his Highnesse, their muster being continued, and 18<sup>9d</sup> besides added to their pay. . . . The Lord Deputie Fleetwood was in some danger the last weeke by an extraordinary vomiting but is now happily recovered. . . .

<sup>1</sup> Probably from Secretary Thurloe.

<sup>2</sup> Shew him (?)

<sup>2</sup> See also *John's Letters*, Dec. 16-20, pp. 58-21, 58-36; Thurloe, *State Papers* IV, 3-9; and an advertisement upon a broad paper sent to his Highnesse by certain gentlemen in Wales, 1656.



The Vintners of London have prevailed for six monthes time to sell off their old stocke of Spanish wyne at 12<sup>d</sup> per pinte, they having paid extraordinary rates for the same. The time of selling of French wyne at 9<sup>d</sup> per quart beginning the first day of the next terme.

*January 19, 1655.*—His Highnesse hath nott bin free to f. 157b. meddle with any businesse these two or three dayes last past, by reason of an angry knott in the nature of a boyle that is broke out unhappily by the side of his neck: he is very well in health. . . .

*January 22, 1655.*— . . . His Highnesse hath ordered that f. 159b. retournes shall bee made from each troope of such persons mustered therein as doe noe duty, of such persons as have bin listed therein since the fight at Worcester, and that noe person be henceforth taken into any troope without leave of his Highnesse, the Lord Lambert, or the Colonel of the regiment. . . .

#### Secretary Thurloe to General Monek

Sir,—The Cantons of Switzerland are engaged in a warre one f. 160. against the other, vizte., the popish against protestants for matters meerly concerning their religion. The popish party have a designe, and itt hath bin longe hatching, to extirpate and roote out the protestant religion and the professors thereof in those parts, and corresponded therein with the Pope, Emperour, Spaine, Savoy, &c. To begin this, they putt to death some, and confiscated the estates of others of their inhabitants, meerly for turning protestants, and held itt in their publike debates as a capitall crime to turne protestant. Endeavours were used by calling together generall assemblies of all the 13 Cantons to moderate them, butt all in vaine, soe that now itt is come to armes. The Cantons of Berne and Zurich have neere 10,000 in the feild, have taken 3 or 4 walled townes and besieged others. Their want is monie which they pray a supply of from his Highnesse, who will strayne himself upon this occasion, although itt can ill bee spared. All that concernes the profession of religion is att stake in this warre



in t[h]ese parts, and according as itt falls out there the face of all Christendome is like to bee in that matter.

Our flete will I hope bee ready a month hence. They are preparing in Spaine about 60 shippes, 26 wherof will I heare bee stout shippes.

J. T.<sup>1</sup>

*Westminster, February 26, 1655.*—The beares in the beare-garden were by order of Major Generall Barkstead kill'd, and the heads of the game cocks in the severall pitts runge off by a company of foote soulders. The frigott of 12 guns riding in Portsmouth Harbour was by the boateswaines sealing of a lettre fired and quite consumed. Some hundred of women are committed to the Tower, not being able to give an satisfactory account of themselves. The great Crane on Tower Hill burnt by accident this weeke, and unhappily fired some gunns that lay charged thereby, which did some exececion. The Councill have order'd this weeke that Mr. Shepard doe prepaire some thing to bee offered about the lawe: that Mr. Phillipp Meadowe bee sent agent to Portugall: that it bee offered to his Highnesse as the advice of his Councill to speake with the Judges to take notice of the great abuses in Martialls at Assises in calling of causes at their pleasure to the great prejudice of the people. A Committee is appointed to consider of what is most fit to bee done for redresse of the abuse of allowing great costes where the damage by the jury is found to bee small. The establishment of the lifeguard passed, vizt. one Captain (Captain f. 167b. Beke), Lieutenant, Cornet, and Quartermaster, 6 Corporalls (of the old lifeguard 20 made pensioners) 1 Trumpeters, 160 souldyers. They also ordered that an embargo bee laid upon all shippes for 21 daies. Some augmentacions were approved of. They order'd that the extent out of the Exchequer against Alderman Titchborne and Alderman Hildesly about the busines of the customes bee for-

<sup>1</sup> This is undated in the MS. but follows a letter of Jan. 22, 1655. There can be little doubt that it was written by Secretary Thurloe, and the heading has therefore been added.





home. Vice-Admirall Bodilo thankfully received his commission. The fleet goes away speedily. A reduction of severall forces of the army is much spoken of, and it's thought will speedily be putt in execution.

### Newsletters<sup>1</sup>

*Westminster, March 11, 1655-6.*—His Highnesse on Wednesday last was neere 2 houres in delivering a speech att Whitehall to the Lord Mayor's Court of Aldermen and common Council of London, wherein hee told them, that since faire meanes would not indolge, foule should inforce the Royall partie to a peaceable deportment; and seeing they were the cause (by their late eruption) of raising the Militia troopes to preserve the peace of the Nacion, it was thought bad reasonable that their estate should bee only charged therewith, that for they might bee in the nature of a standing Militia, and yet not to warfare att their owne charge, being att all tymes to bee drawne forth vpon occasion; that the souldiers aswell as the officers were so many inhabitants of each assoiacion vnder their respective Majour Generalls, and would thereby fitly serve to bee so many watchmen or spies to give notice of or apprehend such as were of desolute lives and conversation, who lived like gentlemen and yet had noe visible way for the same, being chouteurs and the like, who were more fitt to bee sent beyond the seas then to remaine here. That God Almighty hath given us many blessings and deliverances, and now seemingly brought us into a probability of enjoying peace, which called upon us to make some retournes thereof, by endeavoring that after all our expence of bloud and treasure the same might reape some fruits thereof. And this way the Lord hath owned by making more effectuall then was expected, and by receiving a good acceptacion with those who of late stood att some distance with us, soe that the sole end of this way of procedure was the security of the peace of the Nacion, the suppressing of vice, and encouragement of vertue,

<sup>1</sup> The letters which follow are taken from vol. xxviii. of the Clarke MSS.



the very end of Magistracie. That there was a remission in some of the Justices of peace, by many of whose company keeping &c. was countenanced, but now that noblemen, gentlemen, and all ranks and qualities must give security for their peaceable and civil deportment, or goe to prison. That wee had indeed many and good lawes, yet that wee have lived rather under the name and notion of law then under the thing, so that 'tis resolved to regulate the same (God assisting) oppose who will. That now the Majour Generalls had gone through all the Counties of England and Wales, and where the Majour Generalls were present in action these loose and vagrant persons did fly from thence to other Counties, the Majour Generalls' occasions not permitting them to bee in action att one tyme. And for that this City was a place that gave shelter to many such idle loose persons, who had and have their recourse thereto, the same practice is intended to bee sett on foote in the City by their Majour Generall Skippon, the Lieutenant of the Tower, and others commissioned with him; and therefore his Highnes thought fitt to acquaint the Lord Maiour and those Gentlemen present with the same, to the end no misunderstanding may bee had thereof, for that thereby the good Government of the City is intended, and not att all to supercede them or att least to diminish any of their rightes, priviledges, or liberties: which was all his Highnes had to say to them, and soe dismist them.<sup>1</sup> . . .

L. 15b. *Westminster, April 5, 1656.* - Mr. Peter is now againe growne soe distracted that hee had severall persons watching with him night and day, who are sometimes necessitated to use all the strength they have to keepe him in bed; hee raves much of the devill, his lookes are very wild, and his discourse ends many times with half sentences. The Councill have appointed Commissioners

<sup>1</sup> This speech was made on March 5. An abridged report of it is given in the *Publick Intelligencer* for March 3 10, 1657, p. 385. The next number of the same paper, p. 401, contains a 'Declaration of his Highness inviting the people of England and Wales to a day of Solemn Fasting and Humiliation,' fixed for March 28. It is of some interest from its remarks on foreign and domestic politics.



to putt in execution the instruccions for securing the peace of this City, past a proclamation against wearing of daggers and pockett pistols, order'd 1000*l*. for pay of the wives and assignees of the forces in Jamaica. The Commissioners of the Customes required to present the officers now in being to be approved of by his Highness. A large debate about the Swedish treaty as to contraband goods. They assign'd 200*l*. for the funerall of the Bishop of Armagh. A Commission was granted to examine fraudulent debentures in the sale of all lands belonging to the State. Another Commission granted to examine about concealed estates. A list of the shippes to guard the seas approved of. The Revenues of the Excise and Customes to bee applyed for the use of the navy and for mayned souldiours. The monies collected for the protestants in Piedmont in Savoy to bee returned to Geneva by Bills of Exchange. G. M.

*London, June 17.*—Major Generall Worsley was honourable f. 45b. interr'd Thursday last in the Chappell of Henry the 7. Westminster, his horse being attended by the rest of Major Generalls, 20 coaches, 4 regiments of foote, and 10 troopes of horse with his Highnes Lifeguards. . . .

His Highnes haveing advised with the Major Generalls upon manie weighty affaires of State, they are now returning to their severall Commandes.<sup>1</sup> The Commissioners for regulatting excise and customes are by common order under the Greate Seale made Commissioners for granting wine licences. G. M.

*London, July 1, 1656.*—The Earle Marshall of Scotland hath f. 49b. 3 months longer time given him upon his former baile. Major Wildman 3 months liberty upon 10000*l*. baile. Noe wool, wollen cloth, or Fuller's earth ordered to be transported, and that lettres be writte to the Councells of Ireland and Scotland to this

<sup>1</sup> Cf. also, notwithste the Venetian despatches quoted by Rankin, *History of England*, iii. 166, and Thurloe, v. 127.



purpose. The Oath of Secresy concerning the debate of a Parliament taken [off], and a Parliament to be called against the 17 of September. A Declaration for that purpose daily expected.

G. M.

- f. 58. *London, August 2, 1656.*—This weeke orders are gone forth for Generall Disbrowe, and Colonel Hacker's regiments to march about the end of the summer for the relief of Colonel Winthrop's and Colonel Ingoldesbys regiments from Scotland.

Elections have bin made in divers places: Abington, Mr. Hoult a lawier.<sup>1</sup> Yesterday, the Lord Bradshaw, Lieutenant Generall Ludlowe, and Colonel Rich were before his Highnesse and Councill, the later refused to come upon summons untill messengers were sent for him. I heare alsoe that Sir Henry Vane and Major Salway are sent for: itt is said they have bin tampering with those people that would if possible involve the nation into blood againe, and that they have inleavoured where they have interest to disswade the people from electing swordmen, Major Generalls, and Decimators.

J. S.

- f. 59b. *London, August 5.*—A scandalous printed pamphlett was on the last Lord's day throwne into severall streetes and houses of this citty and suburles, vilifying his Highnesse, and perswading the people to make choice of such Members to serve for them in Parliament as may involve the nation in a new warre.<sup>2</sup> It's reported that thousands of them are dispers't into the severall counties. The Lord Bradshaw, Sir Henry Vane, Colonel Birch of Hereford, Mr. Scott, and severall other discontented old Members

<sup>1</sup> On the elections of 1656 see Ludlow's *Memoirs*, ed. 1891, ii. 17, and the authorities mentioned in the note. Some account of the contested elections is given in *Mercurius Politicus*, pp. 7171, 7181, 7191, and the *Publick Intelligencer*, pp. 754, 770.

<sup>2</sup> *England's Remonstrances, or a Word in Season to all Englishmen about their Election of Members for the approaching Parliament.* It is reprinted in Thurloe's *Papers*, v. 268.





are already elected. The Lord Bradshaw Friday last refused to accept of a commission from his Highnesse for the Lord Chancellorsshippe of the Dutchie, and to forbear acting by his other Commission from Parliament, whereby (itt's said) his Circuite will bee stopt. Lieutenant Generall Ludlowe was then likewise before his Highnesse and Councill, and 5000*l*. security demanded of him for his peaceable and good behaviour; itt's said hee will nott give itt.<sup>1</sup> Colonel Rich was alsoe that day attending, butt nott call'd in. This day his Highnesse and Council referr'd him to the examinacion of a Committee.

The Swedish Ambasadour was Saturday last nobly treated by the Lord Lambert att Winbleton. Our frigatts lie see nere Dunkirke and Ostend that nott one of those pirates doe stirre out.

G. M.

*London, August 9, 1656.*—The Commission of the Lord t. 61b. Bradshaw is taken from him. Lieutenant General Ludlowe and Colonel Rich are secured. Sir Henry Vane, Colonel Okey, and Sir Arthur Haselrig are sent for to attend his Highnesse. Sir Gilbert Pickering is made Lord High Steward of Westminster, and Mr. Cary of Haberdasher's Hall is his Deputy. G. M.

*London, August 16, 1656.*—Upon a petition of the Society of . 62. Lincolnes Inne, complaining of the great abuses of erecting lately some thousands of new buildinges in the liberties of Covent Garden and Westminster, contrary to the statute in that behalf, itt was ordered by his Highnesse and Councill Thursday last that all the new foundations of the said houses nott yett completely finished shall bee restrayned till further order, and the builders indicted upon the statute.<sup>2</sup> A Committee of officers were appointed to receive the lists from the severall Major Generalls of such persons as are fitt to bee sent to Jamaica.

<sup>1</sup> See Ludlow's *Memoirs*, ii. 10-11, ed. 1894.

<sup>2</sup> *Mercurius Politicus*, p. 7181, August 14-21, 1656.



Colonel Alured was Thursday last committed to the Isle of Man, and Colonel Rich to the Castle of Windsor. It is generally reported heere, that Mr. Recorder Longe shall bee suddenly made Lord Chief Baron of the Exchequer. His Highnesse hath referr'd itt to the Major Generalls of the severall counties to take care that all Electors shall bee qualified according to the Instrument of Government. Several persons were added to the Commissioners in the severall counties for rejecting of scandalous and ignorant Ministers. Yesterday his Highnesse and Councill observed as a day of Humiliation, and are this day gone to Hampton Court.

G. M.

- 4.64b. *Westminster, August 19, 1656.*—On Friday last his Highnesse and Councill kept a fast in the old Councill Chamber, where Mr. Caryll, Mr. Sterry [?], and Mr. Griffith preached before them. Colonel Rich is sent in custody to Windsor Castle. Colonel Alured was ordered to bee going towards the like confinement in the Isle of Man on Munday, butt itt is suspended for a day or two. Sir Henry Vane should have bin with the Councill to day, butt was nott, nor Vice-Admirall Lawson, who was fetch't from the Wells.

W. R.

- 4.65b. *Westminster, August 23, 1656.*—Heere hath bin great striving about elections, especially for Middlesex att which meeting neere 20 were wounded, the quarrell being betweene the parties of Mr. Chute the lawier, who is said to bee as fairly chosen as his father, and Mr. Giffin<sup>1</sup> the Anabaptist, who was proclaymed one of the Members with Major Generall Barkestead and Sir William Roberts. For London is chosen Alderman Foote, Aldm. Pack, Major Generall Browne, Captain J. Jones, and Mr. Bidolph a silkeman. For Westminster Colonel Grosvenor and Mr. Cary who had above 10000 hands up for their elections. His Highnesse yesterday presented 4 noble horses with very rich saddles and

<sup>1</sup> William Kylin. See Heath's *Chronicle*, ed. 1663, p. 705, and Thurloe, v. 349.



bridles to the Swedish Ambassadour, who went away yesterday. Sir Henry Vane is ordered to give 5000*l.* security by Thursday next to act nothing prejudiciall to his Highnesse and present Governement, or else to be secured. G. M.

*Westminster, August 30, 1656.*—His Highnesse hath taken t. 63.  
away Lieutenant Colonel Fenwick his regiment, and given itt to Lieutenant Colonel Wilks, and likewise his Governour-shippe of Leith and Edinburgh Castle, and conferred them uppon Generall Monck. A field officer is sent for out of every regiment to advise about military affaires, which occasions a flying report that the regimentes are to bee recruited to their former number. Stables are preparing in Scotland yad for the horse of the Lifeguard in order to the better security of his Highnesse person, which (through the malice of disaffected persons) is too much in danger. Sir Henry Vane hath given such satisfaction to his Highnesse that his person is yett att liberty. The Lord Mayor yesterday bestowed a very noble treatement uppon the Lord Lambert, Lord Fleetwood, Secretary Thurloe, and severall others of the Councill which his Lordshippe invited. The list of the Members names will nott bee perfected till next weeke. G. M.

Major Ralph Knight to General Monck

Right Honourable,

This day most of the officers that were appointed to waite on t. 69b.  
his Highnesse mett att Whitehall, where his Highnesse hinted to us the cause of our now meeting; which was that Charles Stuart had 8000 men in Flanders ready to shippe, and had writt to his friends heere nett to stirre till hee was upon the coast, and that Colonel Sexby had promised the King of Spaine to betray a considerable garrison in England to him, and that many heere would joyne with him, as alsoe how the 5th monarchy men and others didd endeavour to putt us into blood with other things which I shall give your Lordshippe an account of when wee have mett



again<sup>1</sup>, which will be on Munday next att 3 a clock. I hope this meeting will much strengthen and cement the army. R. K.<sup>2</sup>

September 6, 1656.

### Newsletters

- f. 70. *September 9, 1656.*—His Highness and Councell have been pleased to order that a further marke of favour be conferred upon the Lord Chancellour of Ireland by augmentinge his Lordship's salary to £2000 per annum. Another earnest thereof they have alsoe bestowed upon many well deserving officers and soldiers, most of his Highness regiment at Jameses, by ordering their arreares to be stated and put in bonds by the trustees at Worcester House, whereby they may be capable of purchasing any of the Forest lands which are now surveyinge. And because Charles Stuart's partie are yet hatchinge new designs against the present government, they have ordered that all delinquents shall departe the late lines of Communication within 7 dayes after proclamation, which shall be forthwith issued. And that 9 regiments of foot shall be forthwith recruited to 1200 in each regiment.
- f. 72b. *Westminster, September 18, 1656.*—Yesterday about ten in the forenoone, his Highnesse being attended with his Councell, the Commissioners of the Greate Seale &c. heard a sermon in Westminster Abbey preached by Dr. Owen, and afterwards went into the Painted Chamber, where hee made his speech.<sup>3</sup> The effect of it was to acquaint the Parliament that they were at peace with all other nacions but Spaine; that hee was morally an enemy from the seed of the serpent that was in him against the seed of Christ in his people in these and other nacions; that hee had espoused the interest of Charles Steward, and given him promise of assistance of men for invading of England, and Don John of Austria had
- <sup>1</sup> See Tharlee, v. 341, for the Secretary's account of the position of affairs, and Vaughan, *Declaration of Cromwell*, ii. 32.
- <sup>2</sup> Major Ralph Kniht, of Monk's regiment of horse, who was one of the officers who had been sent to represent the elements in Scotland.
- <sup>3</sup> Carlyle's *Speeches*, i. 107. See also Vaughan, *Declaration of Cromwell*, ii. 41.





donne the like; that the papists and cavaleeres in England were engaged in assisting this designe, besides some by a Jesuiticall spirit and disposition working upon the discontented spirits, endeavoured to make the Government and the Protector lowe, crying out for justice, righteousness &c. in the meane while shaking hands with the papists and cavaleers interest, and much engaged therein; that if upon the grounds he demonstrated the warre with Spaine should be joyned in by them with his Highnesse it should be donne vigorously; that there might be union in all transactions relating to our affaires at home as well as abroad, and a tenderness that those either of Presbyterian, Independant, or Annabaptist forme, might not tread upon the heeles or prejudice one another, as alsoe that there might bee a continuance of the provision of tythes for the ministers till there were another way of maintenance. There was likewise a full account given of the reason why the Major Generalls were appointed, and the good they had donne, concluding with an exhortacion that all the lawes and other things which might admitt of reformation might bee in their thoughts, that by the preservation of the Ministry for the worshipp of God, and Magistracy for the keepeing of people in good manners, the blessing of God might be upon the nacions, desiring them to goe into the House and choose their Speaker; which accordingly they did, and elected Sir Thomas Widdrington. Severall persons returned have not ticketts to goe into the House, for that they were elected by the cavall-ere party, and other reasons. This day the House appointed 4 Committees vizt. for religion, priviledges, trade, and greevances. This day a bill for taking away the interest of Charles Steward in these nacions was read the first time. There were 120 members or more nott permitted to sitt, of which Mr. Scott, Sir Arthur Heslerigg, Sir Anthony Ashley Cooper (lately one of the Councill) Mr. Weaver, Mr. Maynard, and Mr. Clute were the most considerable. Mr. Lenthall had like to have been refused if he had nott had a good freind to assist him. The manner is, that when any indentures are return'd to the



clerke of the crowne here transmitts them to the Councill, and if they doe nott approve of the persons they are nott to have a tickett, and none that want ticketts will bee suffer'd to goe into the House. Colonel Mylles, Colonel Biscoe, and Lieutenant Colonel Lagoe were appointed to peruse the ticketts.

f. 75. *September 22, 1655.*—Ever since wee mett wee have done nothing but debate about our excluded members, but this day they past a vote, that they should bee referr'd to the Councill for their approbation, and the House should proccede uppon the weighty affaires of the Nation; this was carryed by 96 votes, and is look't uppon as the deciding question; some thinke many will therefore goe from the House, others thinke nott: those that stay will goe on with the worke, and I hope doe good thinges. Most of the leading men which were for the admission of the excluded Members were accidentally or designedly absent. Swin<sup>1</sup> was nott att the vote butt went out a little before.

f. 75b. *Westminster, Sept. 23, 1655.*—As to the proceedings of Parliament they are as followeth: every day since the House satt untill yesterday most of the time was spent about the Members nott approved of by his Highnesse his Councell. It was strongly urged that it was a breach of privillidge of Parliament that any should bee kept out of the House, and that none (sitting the Parliament) could be computent [*sic*] judges of any chosen by the people to bee members but onely the Parliament; but yesterday it was clearly carryed and resolved that the persons chosen to be Members of Parliament were referred to the Councell to bee approved of. Truly my Lord, wee have great cause to blesse the Lord this bussinesse is over, for it was very doubtfull whilst it was debated what would bee the result of the House, and had all that had bin chosen bin admitted of,<sup>2</sup> I leave it to your Lordship to

<sup>1</sup> Swinton, i.e. John Swinton of Swinton, one of the members for Scotland.

<sup>2</sup> According to the *News* of September 20 the number originally excluded was 'near 120.' In that of September 25 it is added that the excluded members were about 160. 'Some of them are gone into the country discontented and will



consider obstructions wee might have mett with in owning the Government and doing good for the nations in this present juncture of times, when all our enemies are plotting against our peace and present government, and to bring in Charles Stuart. . .

*London, September 30, 1656.*—Yesterday complaint was made f. 79. in the House of the great disorder in tappehouses, inns &c. and of Justices of the Peace in licensing persons nott fitt to keepe such houses, especially Justices that are Commissioners of Excise, brewers, and maltsters, which is committed. Drunkennes and swearing is also committed; weights and measures are also committed. Upon a motion against blackpatches used by women on their faces all indecency in apparell<sup>1</sup> was also moved again, both vchich are committed. This day some prisoners for treason were pardoned, the particulars whereof will att large be in print. But our great busines was concerning the necessity of the warre with Spain. It was moved by one of his Highnes Councell, and afterwards spoke unto by others, and truly Sir, in my weake judgement I thinke so much reason was shewen to have a warre with that old enemy, both to our nation and religion that I thinke his Highnes hath done good service therein, if the Parliament will back him with moneyes. To me it is sufficient that the warre is against the Spanyard, because I am satisfyed he watcheth for nothing lesse than an opportunity to tread us to dirt, and say he doth God good service therein, as did the Irish. The Lord graunt wee may not bee too wise in saveinge our purses, and afterwards it be sayd it is too late; but truly hitherto the House seemed to owne the warre, and I hope wil furnish his Highnes to carry it on.

*Oct. 11, 1656.*—Wednesday was a day of thanksgiving without f. 83. any ceremony of ringing of bells making of bonfires or firing of great gunnes. Many of the members dyned at Whitehall where the day occasioned great entertainment. . .

Friday a bill read for the better distribution of the revenues of not apply themselves to the Councell, and some are guilty and dare not.<sup>1</sup> For their protest see *Whitelocke Memorials*, ed. 1853, iv. 274. <sup>1</sup> *I.e.* a bill again t.



Hospitals. The Act for County Registers was read a second time; it received a very large debate because of the opposition it received from the long robe. . . .

- f. 89. *October 11, 1656.*—A bill being presented for the registering all incumbrances upon real estates has taken up the House these two dayes, and is appointed upon Wednesday: the House was this day in a grand Committee to debate it, and so are to bee on Wednesday next. Truly it is a more weighty business than I could have imagined, but I believe it will bee pressed soe farr as shall be practicable. . . . All that I can discover concerning Donatives is that the state will give 10 yeares purchase to those that are willing to part with them, but not compell any. This in the generall: The whole House are minibus in carrying on the best things for the good of the nation, both spirituall and temporall, soe as truly I feare not through mercy but that God will owne us.

II. W.

- f. 93. *Westminster, October 18, 1656.*—The House yesterday resolved into a Grand Committee, and had a debate about the businesse of carrying on the warre with Spaine, which in such cases is usuall for this end, that any Member may have liberty to speake to the businesse soe often as hee pleaseth, which is nott admitted in Parliament. The publick debts were made knowne, which for the sea forces, the land forces, and the charges of the Government amounted to £56,000<sup>l</sup>; odde moneyes, besides an old debt charged upon the Excise about 260000. This you may please to consider willbee all due within one month or two. Nothing was more in debate then how to pay this £56000<sup>l</sup>., and it was propounded that for arrears of Excise from generall merchants of London there would bee yet one hundred thousand pounds; from intercourse merchants, which I understood merchant strangers in London, thirtie thousand; and; from the City of London for arrears of taxes about ten thousand pounds. Then that enquiry should be made what moneyes were in any treasury for the late Kings, Queens





or Princes lands, or what moneys were resting in the hands of any purchaser, and the like for Bi-shops, Deanes and Chapters' lands; all these particulars are referred to a Committee.

Other treasurers and officers intrusted with receipts of money was propounded, which will be considered of upon Tuesday next, which (as I remember) is the day appointed for farther debate, and it is my opinion that when these things are settled wee shall then consider how moneys shall constantly be raysed to carry on the warre according to what shall be thought needfull; for my judgement is, let my owne proportion be what it will, wee must not sterve our good cause, wee have at sea in all places 120 sayle of shippes and 17000 men. I forgott a Committee is to consider of what lands are unsold at Drury house &c. and to enquire into the cause and obstructions why they are unsold.

*Westminster, October 28.*—There was started in the House this f. 97b. day a question concerning the election of successive Protectors as itt was now settled in the Instrument, some debates were concerning itt as to the safety of itt. butt there was noe conclusion made, butt they adjourned without putting any question whether any further debate should bee of itt or noe.

### A Letter from Dr. Worth

Deare Friend,

I must now bee unto you a relator of a very sad providence, f. 109b. but mali scientia non est mala: The West-India fleet were scattered by a violent storme the 23<sup>th</sup> of this month. In that storme the shipp commanded by Captin Farmer sprung a leake,<sup>1</sup> lost boath there boates and three of their anchors, and were so shattered that they could not beare up against the wind, but were forced to lett the vessell drive wheresoever it pleased the providence of God to carry them. On Tuesday the 28<sup>th</sup> instant they came into the Bay of Timoleague<sup>2</sup> (by land some 4 miles

<sup>1</sup> On this shipwreck see *Thornes*, v. 558, 570. The soldiers were part of Col. Bayne's regiment, drawn from the army in Scotland, and on their way to Jamaica. The ship was named the *Three Brothers*.

<sup>2</sup> Timoleague.



from the towne), where they were imbarred before they knew themselves nere the land, and none in the vessell (the weather being very darke and durty) could ges what the land or the Bay was. In this condition they fitted a raft, and put theiron fowre men with a letter in a pitch box, signifying what they were and what their condition was, these men on Wedensday being the 29<sup>th</sup> came to shore alive, but soe bruised that they were not able to leave the place where they landed, but a marchant of this towne nigh the place and heareing of them, roade to them, provided for them, and brought the letter to our Governour on Wednesday about one of the clock. The Governour immediately consulted with the sufferance,<sup>1</sup> Capitaine Vessey, and such other commanders and seamen as were in towne, but the weather was soe darke and the seas soe tempestiouse that it was impossible for any boate from this towne to get to them (this bay being by sea three leagues from the towne, though but 1 mile from land). The vessell had cast anchor in the Bay, but about 6 of the clock theire cable broake, and the vessell was forced on a rock, where it was wracked. Aboard this vessell there were 241 private souldyers, and 29 seamen, and three woemen, whereof one was an Ensiges wife who lay in childebirth, of all which there were onely saved 16 seamen, and about 40 souldjourns. The officers lo-t are Lieutenant Colonel Bramston, Captain Dorrell, Captain Lieutenant Reyner, Ensign Webley, Ensign Bramston, Quartermaster Craycroft, Martiall Hornewall, 3 serjeants, 5 corporalls, 1 drummer, and Captain Farmer who comanded the shipp. The officers saved are onely Lieutenant Petty and Ensign Norman. It pleased God soe to order it that this wrack hapned on the shoore of the Barrony of Courcies<sup>2</sup> (a Barrony that for the greatest part is inhabited by English and such Irish as were never in rebellion), diverse of the English and many more of the Irish attended all that evening on the coast, not to gett the plunder, but to preserve the men whome it should please God to bring to shoare. By this meenes those who are alive were by God's

<sup>1</sup> *I.e.* Sovereign.<sup>2</sup> *Courcys.*



providence preserved, for as the inhabitants discovered any of them approaching to the shoare they would run in and catch at them, and soe helpe them to the land, who otherwise being weakened and bruised would probably by the next wave (the sea ebbing and raging) have bin carryed back againe. The inhabitants likewise carried these poore, bruised, halfe deade men to their howses that night, and provided carefully for them, who probably if they had laine allnight on the shoare would have bin deade before morneing, wherein one Captain John Belew (an honest man fearing God) was most instrumentall. Last night divers of these poore men lay at my howse, and this day they all dyed there. This night they are provided for with good accomodacions for lodgeing and food in this towne, and the Suffraine thought to have bought them clothes who wanted, but it is conceived that many things have bin tooke up by the inhabitants and seamen of other vessells, for which the Governour intends to make a search to morrow, which may helpe for the present to cloath such of those peore men as most neede the same. Besides, though this towne bee very much impoverished, yet the Lord hath enlarged their hearts (in this instance) even to riches of liberality; the tendernes of Majestates and people towards them and readines to receive them is very greate. A word or two from my Lord expressing his Lordshipps sence of this good would bee (I thinke) an engaging incouragement to further welldoing.

Severall circumstances in this providence are considerable (1<sup>st</sup>) that at such a time it should happen the night before our publique humiliation: as if God had saide, since all my doings at a distance will not humble you I wish to bring a judgement home to your very walls that that humble you. 2<sup>d</sup>. The former rebuke on the West-Indies was on shore, not by the power of the enemy but by God's owne hand: though the Lord hath just cause to bee offended with us, yet hee will not give the enemies the honour of being instrumentall to scourge us, but hee will take the veld into his owne hand. 3<sup>th</sup>. That this wrath should not



happen on an enemies coastes, nor on such parts of Ireland as could not, or would not favor them, but in this part where the inhabitants are in some measure able, and in a greater measure willing to supply them. 4<sup>th</sup>. That soe soone after the mercy vouchsafed at sea in the successe of some part of our fleet in takeing part of the Spanish West India fleet, God should subjoyne this sad providence at sea alsoe. O what neede have wee to have water mingled with our wyne; how apt are wee to bee lifted up with moderate exaltacions; though God would have us to rejoyce yet it should bee with trembling. Deare Friend, I have bin soe long in giving you the perticulers of this sad relation that I cannot write ought else at present, and truly the sence hereof swallows up in mee writing, and I beleve in you reading, the sence of all other things. The Lord teach us to beare the rod, and God that hath appointed it. Certainly though wee bee bad, yet God designs good to his owne name. Oh that wee might learne that it is not enough to beare a good cause, if the persons who are to manage it continue evill, there is cause my friend delect ut nigras candidus humor aquas. Excuse therefore this abruptnes of

Your true friend and affectionate servant

EDW. WORTH.<sup>1</sup>

Ringross were  
Kinsale ult.  
October 1656.

- f. 101b. *November 4, 1656.*—Yesterday my Lord Lambert brought into the House an Act for setting up Courts of Justice and equity at Yorke, which startles the lawyers to see the administration of law like to be carried into provinces. This day the Act of Union for Scotland came on the second time, and because of some clauswes about the lawes, the Lords Commissioners of the Great Seale, Lord Chief Justice Glynn, and other the Gentlemen of the longe robe who are of the House, were sent for out of Westminster Hall to attend

<sup>1</sup> In the letter-book this is entered under November 19, which was probably the date of its reception at Monk's headquarters.





the debate, which is adjourned to a Grand Committee of the whole House on Fryday next. There is 22 waggons or cart loades of the monyes come from Portsmouth to the Tower, and 10 or 11 more are behind, but the account falls short above halfe what was reckoned upon.<sup>1</sup> Now thus its seen what the outside thereof will be, I suppose the House will speedily fall upon the business of money againe till they bring it to a result.

*November 7, 1655.*—The House resolved then into a grand Committee in debate of a Bill of Union of Scotland into one Commonwealth with England,<sup>2</sup> which was ordered to be debated in parts: they left the preamble to be considered when the rest of the Bill is agreed to, and began with the first clause, the words whereof I cannot well remember, but the word incorporated took up two [h]ours debate, many interpreting that it could not be properly said to be incorporated with one Commonwealth with England, except all there lawes were first altered, and be as the lawes of England are, to prove which the[y] alleged the example of Wales when it was incorporated into England by Edward the first; but this was very well answered, and at last it past, and the word incorporated was named. The[n] there was an other exception made, that in that clause it was said that the people of Scotland &c. should be united into one Common wealth with England, to which they would have aded that the territories should be also united, and it was ordered accordingly. After this the Speaker resumed the chaire, and the House appointed Wednesday next to enter againe upon the rest of this Act in a grand Committee, and ajourned till Monday morning.

*November 13.*—Yesterday the House resolved into a grand Committee for consideration of the Bill of Union of Scotland into one Commonwealth with England, which is debated by parts; the

<sup>1</sup> The treasure taken in the victory of September 8 by Stayner. See Vaughan, *First Part of the History of the Parliament*, ii. 25 and Thurloe.

<sup>2</sup> On this subject see a pamphlet by an unknown Londoner, printed in Scotland about 1656, *Tractate*, p. 333.



cheif which were under consideration were the placing of the armes, and the second, wether they should be free from Customes as they were in England which trade onely from one port to an other. Both these clauses admitted of much debate. Many would have Ireland preseede, as the better country and being chiefly inhabited by English, but upon the question it was carried for Scotland; then they came to the clause of customes which brought in Excise after it, and it was objected that if salt made in Scotland paid noe more than single Excise it would be a meanes to distroy the salt works by Newcastle; but that argument held not, it being urged that the thing hath bin practiced neere three yeares without producing any such effect, and if you make an union you must allow them as much priviledge as your selves, and be as much concerned for their good and advantage as your selves; and besides if salt from Scotland make Newcastle salt cheaper it will be a generall good to this Nation, and a generall good is to be preferred before a perticular. Upon that [the] whole clause was pass'd, and it being neere one of the clock the Speaker resumed the cheire, and upon the report the debate was put off till Wedens-day next, and then the House to goe into a grand Committee, and soe they rose.

- f. 107b.      November 15, 1656.—Tuesday . . . Lieutenant Colonel White (being employed to bring the Spanish bulloyn from Portsmouth to the Tower) reported to the House that there were 165 chests of fine silver, and 60 chests more of coarser silver, which being weighed were valued at 1000<sup>li</sup>. per chest, besides the coelineede which was valued at 20000<sup>li</sup>. more; <sup>1</sup> and it being thereupon moved that the monethly assessments might bee increased, there being no other wayes to rayse money to carry on the charge of the Spanish warre (which is estimated by a Committee to neare a million per annum), the House declined that motion, and came to this result, that it should be referred to a Committee to consider how the Custome and Excise, or

<sup>1</sup> November 11. This incident is not mentioned in the *Journal of the House*.



either of them, may bee improved for the carryeing on the said warre.

G. M.

His Highness the Lord Protector's Speech in the Painted Chamber to the Parliament assembled the 27th of November, 1656.<sup>1</sup>

Mr. Speaker,

I had some doubt in my self whether I should have spoken or noe at this time, but from some thing you delivered I think my selfe concernd to speake a little. Mr. Speaker, this is the first time wee have mett together, and it is with a great joy of heart to mee to meete you here, I doe now resceave a returne from God in some measure of my prayers for you, and though you have satt but a little time, that you have made manny good lawes, the effect whereof the people of this Common wealth will with comfort finde hereafter. Therefore, Mr. Speaker, you might have spared the excuse you made concerning your time, and as you have soe well proceeded hitherto I doubt not but you will make a good progresse, and I shall bee allwayes ready to assist you and joyne with you in any thing for the being and well being of these nations, and continue my prayers for you.

### Newsletters

*Nov. 29, 1656.*—Tuesday<sup>2</sup>. . . it was moved in the House that day, that in respect they had but 16 dayes then to sitt, and many bills were under consideration that could not bee finished without a longer time of sittinge, that his Highnesse might be moved by that Committee for a longer time, but the House inclined not to that motion. . . .<sup>3</sup>

<sup>1</sup> See *Commons' Journals*, vii. 169. The speech is not given in the *Journals*, though said to be reported to the House by the Speaker.

<sup>2</sup> November 25.

<sup>3</sup> Cf. Article VII. of the Instrument of Government a Parliament was to be summoned every third year, and could not be adjourned, prorogued, or dissolved,



L. 122. *December 13, 1656.*—Wednesday last the House expected a dissolution, or an adjournment, but hearing nothing from his Highness concerninge either,<sup>1</sup> they have dayly since continued their sitting, which hath bin solely about James Naylor the Quaker; for having judg'd him guilty of blasphemy, an apostate,<sup>2</sup> and seducer of the people, it was endeavored by some to give him judgement of death answerable to that offence, but the adverse parte (not of inferior qualitye to the other) answering that hee was not guilty of that crime by any knowne lawes of this Nation, but onely by circumstances, deduction, and conclusions that was made by themselves of the whole matter in question, hee owning Christ that suffered at Jerusalem in whom onely hee had hoped for salvation, and [that] whoever told him of any of his attributes was in his judgement a blasphemer, but if the people cryd Ho[s]anna to him and that a judg'd a crime, it was in them that said it, and not soe much in him that suffered it, and consequently the punishment to be inflicted on them, and not himselfe. After this it was endeavored to bring his judgement of intended death within the compasse of the Mosaiell lawe, which was likewise answered that the whole thereof ought to bee aswell put in execution as any part, and this hath since put all to a stand. As its thought many dayes debate will bee spent yett before judgement will bee given therein.<sup>3</sup> G. M.

without its own consent. But by Article XXIII. the Protector might, 'when the necessities of the State shall require it' summon with the consent of his Council a parliament other than these triennial parliaments, and these additional parliaments could not be dissolved for three months after their meeting. This Parliament came under Clause XXIII, had met on September 17, and might be dissolved on December 10, which would be three lunar months after the date of its meeting.

<sup>1</sup> December 10.

<sup>2</sup> *I. e.* impo for or apostate.

<sup>3</sup> The following notes on the further proceedings of the House are from a newsletter of December 23 amongst the *Carte Papers*, vol. cexxviii. The debate on Naylor is reported at great length in *Burton's Diary*:

'The other day some two or three members moved that we might rise or adjourne in two or three months cause of the shortness of the dayes and thinnes of the House, there being within this week neare 100 members gone home, but the motion was very soon laid aside without a question. Itt being





Jan. 6, 1657.—Yesterday the House heard a report of the f. 128.  
 businesse of Rodney and Cole (upon which the Lord Commissioner  
 Lisle did charge the Lord Whitelock to bee equally guilty with  
 himself as to the irregular proceeding therein); the House resolved  
 [against] Cole herein, [and] voted the decree in the case to be  
 surreptitiously procured, and the proceedings irregular. The Lord  
 Whitlocke clearing himselfe, the House was mov'd that some  
 exemplary punishment might bee inflicted on the Lord Lisle, and  
 after much debate herein the House laid it aside for the present.<sup>1</sup>  
 This day they were upon advance of moneyes, and it was proposed  
 that 12<sup>d</sup>. a head per annum might bee layd upon all the people of  
 the 3 Nations, except such as were day labourers att or under 2<sup>d</sup>.  
 per diem and such likewise as lived upon almes.<sup>2</sup> But in respect  
 present moneyes were wanting it was rather desired that 300000<sup>l</sup>.  
 might be speedily advanced by way of subsidy, but neither of these  
 came to any result, the house adjourning the further [debate] thereof  
 till Thursday next.<sup>3</sup> The Lord Protector having sett at liberty

thought very unreasonable to vote a war, and leave it unprovided for how to carry  
 it on. The Councell and Army men would not with any patience here of such a  
 motion. Some said we could not take Spain nor Flanders with a bare vote.

It was moved the same tyme that all the members might be called, as well  
 the persons not approved as approved of, for that the Councill might surely in  
 three months tyme be well satisfied of the integrity of some of these that were  
 kept out. This motion together with the former bredde some heate in the House,  
 and some reflexion upon persons and calling to the barr. Mr. Rampfield called  
 Sir Gilbert Pickeringe to the barr, and Lord Strickland, Mr. Godfrey, and thus  
 Leates grew, but the Speaker was so discret as to divert it by another question,  
 and we rose all good friends.<sup>4</sup>

This letter, which is dated December 23, goes on to say that a call of the House  
 was fixed for to-morrow week, which seems to show that the debate described took  
 place on December 20. See *Commons' Journals*, vii. 471.

<sup>1</sup> See *Burton's Diary*, i. 19, 309-304; *Commons' Journals*, vii. 479.

<sup>2</sup> Compare *Burton*, i. 293.

<sup>3</sup> A letter from the *Carte MSS.* (lxvii. 18) gives the following account of the  
 situation as it appeared to a staunch supporter of the government: 'This poore  
 nation' wrote Major-General Butler to Montagu, on January 9, 1657, 'is in a totter-  
 ing condition, not so much (I make account) from the preparations of the enemies  
 abroad, as from the contrivance of the e within our bowell, and our unwilling



Sir Henry Vane and Mr. Peake, the latter of them yesterday at Allhallowes endeavored to worke upon a great auditory upon pretence of the unjustnes of his sufferings.

G. M.

Lieut. Gen. Brayne to General Monck

f. 129. Right Honourable,

I am through God's mercy safely arrived here. I finde the people healthfull, but all things unsettled as to plantation, fortification, annoying the enemy, but I hope these difficulties will bee removed though at present they are great our then would have been at the beginning, yet now I having given liberty to all the troublesome and unusefull officers to goe for England, the souldyers fall diligently to worke, and I hope within six monthes will arriise provisions for themselves, if [we] had but sufficient supplies till that time, but I hope his Highnes will take care for all. The cuntry is healthfull and fruitfull, as any in the Spanish quarters, situated in eye of the Indies, haveingsafe and defencable harbours. Wee have heare about 5000 men well armed, and I hope well resolved, who now apply themselves seriously to planting, in which I hope they will succeed well, the product of this place being as good as any in the West Indies. Our greatest wants will bee

nesse in Parliament, at least our delatoriness to obviate and prevent them, nay I wishe our enemies do not take more encouragement from our proceedings than our friends do or can. We have not all this time raised one penny towards the Spanish warre, nor are like to do after this rate we go till we heare of him upon our Loader I thinke, but instead of hastening that great concernment we have more minde to take away the Militia and lessen our army, as though we had the greatest calme of peace that ever yet we sawe. All these things, and many more I might speake of, considered together with our uncontention in point of Government me thinks threaten us sorely, yet that his Highnes and Council have a thorough sense of them as I perceive by some discourse last night the officers had with his Highnes is some reviving to my hopes, which I protest to you have bene withering this month apace, and now I hope God will direct to some speedy prevention, which is much better than a late remedy.



servants, which if wee once had, I thinke wee should bee the richest plantation in the Indies. At my coming hither I touched at Barbadoes where I was very well entertayned. W. B.<sup>1</sup>

Cagway in Jamaica, 8 January, 1657.

### Extracts from Newsletters<sup>2</sup>

Jan. 24, 1657<sup>3</sup>.— Munday<sup>4</sup> the House spent some time in hearing all the transactions and depositions concerning the late plot at Whitehall read, and thereupon ordered, that Friday come fortnight should be observed as a day of thanksgiving for the discovery thereof before it was executed upon his Highness person. It was thereupon moved, that in respect his Highness person was in such continuall danger by the wicked designs of disaffected persons, that for the better security of the nation a kingly and hereditary government might be speedily settled. This was for some time debated, but came to no result. . . .

Fryday<sup>5</sup> the Speaker with above 200 of the Members attended his Highness at Whitehall, and as they were going up into the banquettinge house part of the staycase brake, and down fell many of the Members, vizt. the Lord Richard Cromwell, whose shoulder was much bruised; Mr. Solicitor Generall Ellis, one of whose legges is broken; Lieutenant-Colonel White, whose arme is sayd to be broken, with many other members prejudiced. . . .

Major Generall Boteler is under a cloud by reason of a charge presented against him. The continuing or dissolving the power of the Major Generalls is soe even a cast that as yet it cannot be discerned.<sup>6</sup>

<sup>1</sup> Lieutenant-General William Bryne to his old commander General Monk. *Prayer* arrived at Jamaica on 14 December, 1656, and died there September 2, 1657. *Thurloe*, v. 770; vi. 512.

<sup>2</sup> The letters for 1657 are from *Clarke MSS.* vol. xxix.

<sup>3</sup> January 19.

<sup>4</sup> January 23.

<sup>5</sup> On December 25, Major General De Berrough introduced a bill for confirming the power of the Major-Generals, which was read a first time on January 4. After many days' debate it was rejected on January 29 by 124 to 88 votes. See *Commons'*



*Feb. 7, 1657.*—Many citizens of London have laid severall wagers of late that we shall have suddenly an alteration of the present government, but what their meaning is we cannot yett discern.

*Feb. 11.*—The House this weeke spent some time in debating of publique assessments, and ordered thereupon that noe tax or assessment bee hereafter laid upon the people of the three nations but by their free consent in parliament, but the next day<sup>1</sup> after the passing of this vote, understanding that the same was against one of the Articles in his Highness Instrument of Government, ordered that the said vote should bee repealed.

*Journals*, vii. 481, 3. and *Burton's Diary*, i. 230, 310. The following extracts relating to these discussions are from letters amongst the *Clarke Papers* in the Bodleian Library:

'The sense of the greater number, I heare was to indemnify such as had acted, what was done being done by the state upon necessity, but not to continue it by a law. 'Twas said 'twould inteyle a quirell, and punish some for other mens faults. The bill was not cast out, neither was there a time appointed for a second reading.' (John Crove to Montagu, January 1, 1657. *Clarke MSS.* lxxiii. 16.)

'The bill for Declaration was read on Wednesday, and begot a very furious debate about the 2nd reading of it. Lord Claypoole spoke first to the rejecting of it, and L. Broughill and L. Whitlock seconded him, and severall others spoke highly against the bill; the principall argument was the breach of the public faith in violating an Act of Oblivion which was never done in any age in this nation. The Major Generalls were very much spoken against, as a constitution too big to be bounded within any law, and that it was always the usher to an arbitrary power, and to oppress the people &c. That party take such reflexions very ill out. Its doubtfull they will have the word in their owne hands. I cannot tell how it is relisht at Whitehall. Various reports upon it.' (Undated newsletter signed T. B. *Clarke MSS.* lxxiii. 21.)

'Wednesday last the house sat till candle light upon the bill for the declarations, and next day (after 2) came to a question. The house was twice divided upon itt and was carryed for the rejection 124 to 88. The Major-generalls were very loath to surrender. It was a serious debate, and not without sharpness and reflexions. The exceptions between Gen. Dishorow and Mr. Ash were debated next morning, but upon some explanation though the words were high all was putt upp. It was expected that the exceptions between Mr. Cromwell and M. Gen. Butler should have come on in order, but I heare that was taken up without doors and it was not voted on.' (New letter from T. B., February 1, 1657. *Clarke MSS.* cccxxviii. 88.)

<sup>1</sup> February 16.





Secretary Thurloe to General Monck<sup>1</sup>

Sir

The Alarum of Charles Stewarts landinge his Forces doth somewhat coole, the Spanyard not as yet makeinge good his promised supplies; howeuer it will be good to haue an eye vnto his partye, and as I receiue any Intelligence concerninge hym I shall be sure to let you knowe it. Yesterday wee fell into a very great debate in parliament: one of the Aldermen who serues for the Cittie of London brought in a paper called a Remonstrance, desireinge my Lord Protector to assume the Kingly power, and to call future parlaments consistinge of 2 houses, as alsoe that their members who are chosen to serue in parliament, may not be excluded to sitt and serue there but by Judgment of the house whereof they are members; it is alsoe desired that noe person should be chosen to sitt or serue in parliament that hath bene of the Malignant partye, or is not feareinge god and of a good conversation; the same qualifications are put vpon the other house alsoe, and those my lord protector by that paper is to name, for the first tyme, and then none to be admitted but by consent of that house it selfe; and some thinke that this will be very good to preserue the good Interest against the Incerteintye of the Comons house, which is to be chosen by the people; yet vpon these alsoe there is a barre for a Committee of a precedent Parliament is to ioyne with the priny Counsell to examine whether the members of the succeedinge parliament be chosen accordinge to the qualifications, yea or not, and to exclude those who are not vntill the house shall iudge their Cases. His Highnes is alsoe desired to nominate his successor in his life, to preuent the incerteintie of an Election after his death; prouision is likewise made for raiseinge a constant Revennew for mainteyninge the army; the delinquent partie are declared vncapable for euer of any trust in these nations, and an oath of abjureinge Charles Stewarts Title is,

<sup>1</sup> The original of this letter is *Leipziger MS.* 2618, f. 51. A copy is amongst the *Clarke MSS.* (xxxix. 7).



to be put vpon them vnder a forfeiture of parte of their estates ;  
 prouision is likewise made for libertye in religion. I haue writt  
 the more fully to you in these particulars, because you may be able  
 to satisfie any others who may haue scruples about this businesse. I  
 doe assure you it arises from the parliament only ; His Highnes knew  
 nothinge of the particulars vntill they were brought into the house ;  
 and noe man knowes whether if they be past, but that his  
 Highnes will reject them. Its certeyne he will, if the securitie of  
 the good people and cause be not provided for therein to the full.  
 It is good that you informe your selfe concerninge the posture of  
 the Armye with you, because some vnquiet spirits or other will take  
 this or any other occasion to put the Armye into discontent by  
 false reports. I rest

your affectionate, faithfull, and humble seruant

JO: THURLOE.

Whitchall  
 24 febr  
 1656

prouision is likewise made for confirminge the sales of the Kinges,  
 Queenes, princes, and other lands sould by the parliament.

[Addressed] For the Right Honorable Generall Monck  
 Comaunder in Cheife of the forces in Scotland at Edenburgh.

JO: THURLOE.

hast post  
 hast.

### Newsletters<sup>1</sup>

- f. 8. Itt is nott soe strange as true, that the Parliament was this  
 day about setting the Nation in another way of Governement, vizte.  
 by King, Lords, and Commons, and there are two for one for itt.  
 The souldjery are against it in the Howse [and] without doores ;  
 they mutter, but I am of opinion it will passe, because it limitts

<sup>1</sup> Undated, written about February 23 or February 24, and probably from John  
 Rushworth. Pack presented his paper to the House on February 25.



the King to mention<sup>1</sup> the lawes, liberties, and properties of the people, and not to levy monies but by consent in Parliament, which a Protector doth not in all things soe comply with. To set downe the arguments pro and con would bee too large, onely this I presume, they are soe highly incensed against the arbitrary actings of the Majour Generall that they are greedy of any powers that will be ruled and limited by lawe. Both sides are for Monarchy, but the one is for a Fifth Monarchy, the other for a single Monarchy; and if you ask my opinion, and if I must have one of these, give mee the latter with lawes, then the other without lawes, for they act arbitrarily, and on principles of necessity, which is an evill counsellor among good men.

J. R.

*London, February 26, 1654.*—Monday<sup>2</sup> Alderman Pack of L. C. London presented a bill for making his Highnesse King, and impowering him to make choice of his successor, and for settling the future Governement in 3 estates, vizt. King, 70 persons (to be chosen by his Highnes, and to have much of the power of the late House of Peeres), and Commons. Much debate there was wether the said bill should bee read. The House were divided thereupon, and carried by 120 voyces that it should be then read, which done the House adjourned the further consideration thereof till Tuesday. Publicque notice is taken that all the Majour Generalls voted against it, and most of the officers of the army now in towne talke openly of their dislike of it. Tuesday was taken up upon the debate of this single question, vizt. whether the said bill should be debated in partes, or in the whole as it now lies pen'd, and upon the question it was resolved that the House to morrow morning resume the consideration thereof in parte. Wednesday produced a long debate whether the said bill should bee considered of in a Grand Committee or in a House, and it was carried for the latter. The House adjourned themselves till Saturday, appointing Friday for a day of Humiliation to make the directions of God in this greate

<sup>1</sup> Maintain ( )

<sup>2</sup> February 23.



business. This day the officers of the army mett (as they doe weekly) at Whitehall where the business of King-shipp was debated, and hearing the Majour Generalls were met at the Lord Desborough's lodgings sent a Committee to acquaint them with the feares and jealousies that lay upon them in relation to the Protector's alteration of his title, and to desire the knowledge of the truth of things. The Majour Generall herupon invited them to come thither, where the Lord Lambert opened the substance of the bill for King-shipp, and that done towld them, altho' they were Members of Parliament, yet they were fellow members of the army with them, and therefore their conjunction in Concell now as necessary as ever; hee invited them to moderation and patience in this weighty business, and to waite upon the eye of Providence therein. After severall officers had particularly delivered their judgements in dislike of the thing, the meeting brooke upp. The same day his Highnes sent cautionary letters to all the Militia troops, wherein notice was taken of Charles Stuart's preparacions abroad, and of his intencion to land an army this Spring, requiring their readines and care to oppose them, and promising a reward for there service.

G. M.

1. 12. *February 28, 1658.*—Yesterday Mr. Galeaspey and Mr. Nye preached in the Parliament House before the Members. The first was bitter, the 2d more moderate against King-shippe. When the duty of the day was over att Whitehall, his Highnesse made a large speech to many officers of the army then present; wherein hee tooke notice that hee knew nothing of the Bill for King-shippe till the day before that Colonel Mills acquainted him therewith, that hee might have bin King longe since if hee had delighted to weare a feather in his hatt, that those vaine titles hee was never taken with, yett thought itt convenient that a check should be putt upon the unlimited power of this Parliament (which hee never was free to call, nor willing to agree to the Instrument of Government made by 8 of the Major Generalls), for that by the same law and reason





they punished Naylor they might punish an Independent or Anabaptist, whereby the interest of the godly people of the 3 nations could nott bee secure as the Governement is now establish't, the Instrument for which hee hath long desired might bee altered, desiring that any 10 of them with some other freinds would meete with him, and debate thinges for their satisfaction.<sup>1</sup> This day the House pas't a previous vote, vizt., that the passing of any parte of the Bill for Kingshippe should nott bee binding unless the whole was assented unto. G. M.

### Secretary Thurloe to General Monck

*Westminster, March 5, 1659* — Yesterday and this day wee f.14b  
spent in Parliament in the debate whether his Highnesse should nott bee advised for the future to call Parliament consisting of 2 Houses, and at last it was resolved very unanimously that hee should. The other House is to bee called by writt in the nature of the Lords' House, but is not to consist of the old Lords, but such as have never been against the Parliament, but are to bee men feareing God and of good conversation, and such as his Highnes shall bee fully satisfied in, both as to their interest, affection, and integrity to the good cause. And wee judge here that this House thus constituted will bee a great security and bullwarke to the honest interest, and to the good people that have been engaged therein; and will nott bee soe uncertaine as the House of Commons which depends upon the election of the people. Those that sitt on the other House are to bee for life, and as any dye, his place is to bee filled up with the consent of that House it selfe, and not otherwise, so that if that House bee but made good at first it is likely to continue soe for ever, as farre as man can provide.

I suppose you have heard that the officers have had their meetings, and some of them were not without their dissatisfactions, but his Highnes having spoken to them at large the other

<sup>1</sup> The speech is given in a letter printed in *Cloten's Diary*, i. 382.



night, this day they sent a Committee to wayte upon his Highnes to assure him of their satisfaction in his Highnes, and of their resolutions to acquiesce in what hee should thinke to bee for the good of these nations.

J. T.

### Newsletters<sup>1</sup>

f. 15b. *March 7, 1652*.—Munday the House debated the first paragraphe of the bill which was for making his Highnes King, and it was ordered that the said paragraphe should bee postponed, and debated in the last part of the said bill.<sup>2</sup> Tuesday severall officers of the army met at Whitehall, and other Members of Parliament and army joyned with them, and upon debate of the busines of Kingship much satisfaction was given of the proceedings and result of the House therein. That day the House debated the point of succession, and ordered that the Protector himself should in his lifetime nominate his owne successour; see little opposition was made to this vote, that they were not soe much as divided thereupon. Wednesday the officers met again at Whitehall, and appointed a Committee of themselves to attend his Highnes. That

<sup>1</sup> March 2. See *Commonwealth Journal*, vii. 97.

<sup>2</sup> First Article of the Remonstrance:

'That your Highnes will be pleased to assume the name, style, tytle, dignity and office of King of England, Scotland and Ireland and the respective dominions and territories therunto belonging, and the exercise thereof, to haould and enjoy the same with the rights, priviledges, and prerogatives justly, legally, and rightly therunto belonging. God who puts downe and setteth up another, and gives the Kingdomes of the world to whom-ever hee pleaseth, having by a series of Providence] raised you to bee a deliverer to these Nations, and made you more able to govern us in peace and prosperity then any other whatsoever soe long as God shall continue to us the blessing of your life and government; and for preventing such confusions and inconveniencies that otherwise may ensue upon your death, *that your Highnes will be pleased in your life time to appoint and declare the person, who shall, immediately after your death, succeed you in the government of these nations; and we shall receive your Highnes acceptance of our unfained desire herein as a further testimony of your care and good affection to us and this Commonwealth, and doe faithfully oblige ourselves to adhere to you with the expense of our lives and estates.*' (*Chole MSS.* xix. f. 10b.)

The second part of this article was recd in an abridged form on March 3, the words italicised being voted to stand as part of this Remonstrance.



day the Parliament considered of the part of the bill for nominating 70 persons to bee another and 3d estate in the nature of a House of Peeres, but came to no result. Thursday and Fryday the consideration thereof was resumed, and these following results past there-upon, vizt. That there should be 2 Houses of Parliament; That the number of the other House should bee not above 70, nor under 40; That they should be chosen by his Highnes; That when any of them dye others in their stead shall bee appointed by the said House; That no Irish rebels, or such as were actors, ayders, counsellours, or abettours in the late warre against the Parliament since 1612, unles such as have since given signall testimonies of their good affection to the present Government, shall bee capable of sitting in the said House. The words 'signall testimonies' admitted of some debate, soe that the explanation and ascertaineinge thereof is referred to a Committee. That noe Member duely elected to serve in either House, shall bee kept out from the performance of his duty therein but by the judgement of that House of which hee is chosen a Member. This day was spent in debate of the bill for the next 3 moneths double Assessments, and upon the question committed to a Grand Committee of the whole House. A motion was made that the clergie might bee exempted from the payment thereof, upon which much debate was had, but at last layd aside.

G. M.

*March 10, 1652.*—I doubt nott butt you have heard that of late L. 17b.  
there hath bin amonge the officers a tender sence of the present publique transactions, which occasioned the addresse of many officers of the army to his Highnes, who (having receaved much free intertainment) were emboldened to improve his Highnes leave by a second adresse, which was done the last Thursday by about nine or ten of their number, who were chosen by the rest to represent their thoughts and desires in some better composure then could be done by soe many together, which was presented both



modestly and freely, and as acceptably received, wherein my Lord was pleased to use such tender and plaine discovery of his constant regard to his army, and the artient cause of the honest people under his government, and gave such Christian assurance thereof that amounted to a large satisfaction both to them and to the Councill, to whom those officers did yesterday make their reports. Besides which, many addresses are come up from the good people of manny parts of the nation to rep[re]sent their feares about such things which now are upon the wheele, and are very welcomly received by his Highnes, soe that we hope the common enemy shall neither prevale to weaken the hands of the army, nor swallow up the old honest cause (of what kind soever their attempts are), nor yet render that cause nor the army a just reproach to the defenders thereof. Their present weightie affaires have a little demurred the consideration of the rebelle of regiments from Scotland, as alsoe the settling of the busynes of the honest Remonstratours who came from Scotland, whose case is much condoled here by many of our choife officers and others, as being a busines allyed with the same interest which is here also striving against the spirit of malignancy in this nation. The tender respect which your Lordship have borne to them in Scotland is very honorably resented, as that which merits acknowledgment from all good and rightly affected people, who think themselves necessarily involved with them in the same duty of a common indeavour to preserve the interest of God and good men, that at last it be not over run by cunning and pernicious persons, and fawnings of the opposite party, judging it better to imbarque with that parte which is most like by the arme of God to ride out all stormes, and with it to sinke or swim, if (at least) it be possible that such a cause (which we trust the mercy and goodness of God will yet owne) should at lenght suffer shipwreake. There is lately come forth an order for the regiments about London to recruite to two thousand each regiment.

H. D.<sup>1</sup>

<sup>1</sup> It is possible that H. D. is a mistake for G. D. and that this letter is from George Downing to Mouch. See his letters of March 19. On the other hand it





*March 10.*—Since the votes, that his Highnesse have liberty to f. 19.  
nominate his successor, and that there bee two Houses of Parliament,  
wee sitt uppon noe other businesse after ten of the clock (except  
Saturdayes) but onely the severall clauses of this Remonstrance for a  
settlement, and the great worke hath bin that none chuse or be chosen  
Members of Parliament but such as [are] under certaine quali-  
fications of godlines and honesty, excludeing Papists and Cavaliers  
for life. My Lord, I was fearefull that this Remonstrance would  
have found farre greater opposition then I can perceive it is like  
to doe. Good men decree it, but when the particulars come into  
debate the arguments against it prove very light as to my under-  
standing. This day it was resolved, that there bee a Committee to  
judge of Members hereafter to bee chosen to sitt in ensuing  
Parliaments.

*March 11, 1652.*—The House have spent much time this weeke f. 20b.  
in debate of the qualifications of the Members that are to bee  
chosen in future Parliaments, and voted that they should bee  
persons of integrity, and of godly life and conversation, noe Irish  
rebells, nor any in Holy Orders, none that denyes the Scriptures,  
or such as will not acknowledge the Magistracy and Ministry of  
the nation and the sacrament of the Lord's Supper to bee the  
ordinance of God. Some dayes were spent likewise in debate of a  
revenue to bee settled upon his Highnes and his successours, and  
yesterday it was resolved that 1300,000<sup>li</sup> should bee settled as a  
yearly revenue upon them, of which they compute 300,000<sup>li</sup> per  
annum for his families expence; 100,000<sup>li</sup> per annum for main-  
tenance of his land forces; and 600,000<sup>li</sup> per annum for payeing  
his fleet. The Excise and Custome will rayse above 900,000<sup>li</sup> per  
annum thereof; the Exchequer 200,000<sup>li</sup> per annum, and the  
remainder upon particular offices. His Highnes is giving out  
Commissions for the rayseing of 6000 foot; they are given out to

looks as if the author were an officer and H. D. may be Major Henry Dorney, one  
of the Scottish Officers sent to London in the previous September to represent the  
army there.



- bee for forrigne service, some say to joyne with the Portugall against the Spanyard, others affirme that they are to joyne with the French against the Spanyard, but their designe is not yet certainly knowne. Many give out that Charles Stuart will bee here with a small army about the middle of the next moneth, when our forces will bee in a readines to receive them. The landing of Generall Brayne at Jamaica with his whole number of shippes and men is verified by letters under his owne hand<sup>1</sup> and other officers of quality there. The House hath ordered to sitt twice a day for 8 dayes together for the dispatch of the Bill for Kingshipp. This dayes debate was for rayseing money to carry on the Spanish warre, but the House came to no result therein. G. M.

- i. 23. *March 19, 1657.* - I am glad to heare the officers are soe well disposed in Scotland; most heere are nott only come to a contented subjection to what is doing, butt to a liking thereof. This day the House passed the clause for Liberty of Conscience, and indeed much more to satisfaction generally then as in the Instrument of Government. They alsoe passed the clause for Confirmation of the Acts and Ordinances of Parliament for the sale of the King's and other lands sould by authority of Parliament, soe that there onely remains the clause for the Oath to be given to the Cavaliers, and two or three businesses which are comitted to Committees for the wording, and the clause about the name to be given to the single person, which was postponed, soe that by Satterday, or the beginning of the next weeke at furthest, I hope we may come to a close. Truly I was never soe tired in my life as with this constant sitting morning and afternoone. I pray God give his blessing; the Cavalliers and other of our enemies in Flanders are infinitely madde at what is now doing heer, as looking upon it as having a tendency to settlement. G. D.

- i. 29. *March 31, 1657.* Yesterday the bill for attainting the rebels

<sup>1</sup> See p. 86 *ante*.



in Ireland was read, this day the bill for indemnity. About 11 of the clock the Speaker attended with the Members came into the Banqueting House, where his Highnes, attended with severall of the Counsell and many officers, Generall Mountagne carr[y]ing the sword before him (the Lord Lambert being at Wimbleton), met them. The Speaker acquainted him that the greate Councell of the 3 nations assembled in Parliament had by advice from heaven bin indeavoring to settle a right basis of government in these dominions, to reduce the law to its right current, and to ascertaine propriety by settling a kingly government, which (by reason of the many distractions and interests amongst us) will and ever hath bin best pleasing therein. The word Protectour was never knowne unless in a princes minority: the word King the Scripture and lawes of the nation doe owne. At last he presented the petition, and humbly desired his Highnes' acceptance thereof and assent thereunto. Which being read by Mr. Scobell his Highnes answered, that the Lord had enabled him to rime throw many troubles, and in his owld age he well hoped for rest. That he beleevd that the Lord had blest their counceills, and what they now offered was an earnest of their reall affections to him, but the bussines was of soe greate importance, and consisted of soe many heads that he desired time to waite upon God for counceill and direction, and to consult with his owne conscience therein; and what the Lord should please to sett upon his hart he would faithfully and speedily communicate to them without feare of any discontented persons.

G. M.

### The Protector's Speech, March 31, 1657

This is speech vii. in Carlyle's 'Cromwell.' See Burton's 'Diary' i. 113-6. A short account of Cromwell's answer is given in 'Mercurius Politicus' p. 7702. Carlyle's version follows that printed in Burton's 'Diary' i. 113-6. The version in the 'Clarke MSS.' vol. xlix. f. 29b to f. 32, differs very little from that in Burton's 'Diary.' The variations are as follows; compared with



Burton i. 413, the 'Clarke MSS.' gives, 'by your hands' . . . 'a brazen forehead' . . . 'it being of the greates and high importance.' . . .

Compared with p. 411, 'that right treasure' . . . 'and rather to study to say noe more' . . . 'truly I have noe more to desire of you' . . . 'I have lived the latter part of my age, if I may say soe in the fire, in the midst of troubles' . . . 'truly if it could be supposed they should be brought into a narrow compasse if I should take a vew of them at once, I doe not thinke they would, nor I doe not thinke ought' . . . 'the busines that have layen heavy upon mee' . . . 'which made mee stand under the wayte' . . . 'looking upon the cander and pleasure God' . . . 'arguments of self love' . . . 'if it should have such motives rising in mee.'

Compared with p. 115, 'God forbid such ayms should suffer any dishonest or indirectness on my parte' . . . such 'honest ends as these are that you have proposed' . . . 'at the end of their worke' . . . 'he should run upon such a worke as this is' . . . 'without approve the hart of God and seeking an answer from him, and putting for life and death to him' . . . 'prepared and preferred this worke' . . . 'mistaken in the person' . . . 'by a mistake, and if this should be soe to you' . . . 'it had bin better I am sure he had never bin borne' . . . 'being you have made this progress in this busines' . . . some small time . . . 'nor yet the desire of any may have last in them after things that are not good shall alter me from giving.'

Compared with p. 116, 'yett I shall thinke myselfe bound to give you a speedy answer to those things which I can.'

### The Protector's Speech, April 3, 1657

The speech made by Cromwell on April 3, which is number viii. in Carlyle's Collection, is printed in Burton's 'Diary,' i. 417, and in the old 'Parliamentary History,' xxiii. 161. The variations of the copy in the 'Clarke MSS.' are as follows:—





Compared with Burton, p. 417, the Clarke MS. gives, 'very hartely sorry' . . . 'some infirmity of body seized upon me' . . . 'and sought God' . . . 'I must needs bear this testimony to you that you.'

Compared with p. 418, 'by yourselves and me hereafter' . . . 'and as to the libertyes of men professing godliness' . . . 'as a fault in them or any of them' . . . 'Catholique interest for the people of God' . . . 'civil liberties and interests' . . . 'I wish my soule may not enter into his or their seerits' . . . 'licke Christian men, men of honour, and Englishmen' . . . 'if God shall count me worthy' . . . 'to give an accompt' . . . 'the late warres' . . . 'I could give none but it would be a wicked one if it could not comprehend' . . . 'by another tytle then what I doe now beare' . . . 'you have left me without a liberty of choyce.'

Compared with p. 419, 'd-terminations' . . . 'and hath all good in it according to worldly comprehension (soveraigne power)' . . . 'memory of that in my heart, and by you I give the Parliament' . . . '(except some very few things the Instrument beares testinnyony of itselie)' . . . 'indulgence towards mee, that it be taken in tender part' . . . omits 'in answering' . . . 'of your proceeding therein' . . . 'seeing the wayes hedged up as it is to me I cannot.'

Compared with p. 420, 'May be returned upon mee thus, are there such good things so well, why can you not' - 'any inducements by you to alter' . . . 'but it will bee candidly represented.'

### Newsletters

*April 4, 1657.* --Yesterday his Highnesse sent a letter to the Hon<sup>rs</sup> desiring them to send a Committee to him in the afternoone which accordingly was done. His Highnes' speech to the Committee I have sent inclosed, which made many joyfull, and others sad. Wee have bin this day debating whether to adhere to our former vote, f. 56b.



that his Highnes should accept of all or nothing, and about one of the cloke this day wee came to a question, which was wether the Parliament would adhere to there former votes in the Petition and Advice, and it was carryed in the affirmative; upon which it was moved that a Committee might bee appointed to draw out the reasons which moved the House to such resolutions as was contained in the petition and advise delivered to his Highnes, the debate whereof is adjourned to Monday morning. Its enough my Lord to set before you our turnes, straytes, difficulties, for I am not able to give a judgement therein, onely should thinke if wee acted soberly, wee might be contented to have the good things his Highnes likes see well settled, although he cannot accept of the title, which many thinke would propogate a good interest, but surely that is not a matter of such consequence as ought to be insisted one.

S. D.

L. 37      *April 1, 1657.*—The inclosed paper contains the substance of his Highnesse' speech delivered yesterday to a Committee of Parliament, who by order of the House attended at Whitehall (upon a letter his Highnes writ all with his owne hand, and sent to the Parliament for that purpose). The thing will speake it selfe, though there are various content put upon it suetable to the severall affections of respective persons, some declaring it possitive, others inferre roome for a further adresse. However the Parliament after much debate this day passed a vote to adhere to their former votes, and appointed Monday morning to consider of a Committee to draw up reasons to cleare there proceedings, and (if it may bee yet) to endeavour his Highnes' acceptation, at least (as they call it) a more Parliamentary answer. Some eminent ones that have bin very instrumentall in framing this great worke appeared not in the House this day, and 'tis questionable when they will, though they have bin heretofore solicited by frinds. This dayes vote was carried by 9 or 10 voices, and some moved that the House would adjourne for some time.

R. W.



*April 9, 1657.*—Yesterday the whole House mett his Highnesse in the Banquetting House with the votes for adheering to their Petition and Advice. His answer is heerin inclosed. This morning the House appointed a Committee to conferre with him accordingly, and to endeavour his satisfaction, and have adjourned the House till Saturday.

G. D.

### Speech of the Protector, April 8. 1657

This speech is number ix. in Carlyle's 'Cromwell.' Carlyle's version is based on that printed in the 'Old Parliamentary History,' xxiii. 161. The copy of the speech sent by Downing to General Monk, and enclosed in this letter, differs very little from that in the 'Parliamentary History.' The following are the only important variations.

Compared with p. 164, the 'Clarke MS.' reads: 'this common cause wherein wee have bin engaged' . . . 'and therefore I do most readily acknowledge the authority advising these thinges' . . . 'as being thinges tending to the settlement' . . . 'big with the expectation of anything that may adde to their better being' . . . 'and so I have had of this Instrument and I hope as I have exprest.'

Compared with p. 165, 'a man that is conscious to his own infirmities and disabilities, and doth make some measure of counsell that may seeme to come from heaven, counsell in the word of God who leaves a roome for charity' . . . 'I hope it will be noe evill to measure your advice and mine owne infirmitie together' . . . 'conscience in him that received talents' . . . 'Truly, Mr. Speaker it has been heretofore a matter of (I thinke) but philosophicall discourse, that a great place, great authority, is a greate burthen. I know it is, and I know a man that is convinced in his conscience that nothinge lesse will enable him to the discharge of it then to have assistance from above' . . . 'in such undertakings' . . . 'I had and I have hesitation as to that individual thing if undertaken anything not in faith' . . . 'nor do I take it that you lay any upon mee' . . . 'Truly the same answer



that I have as to this point of duty one way the same consideration have I as to duty.'

Compared with p. 166, it omits 'another way' and 'surely you have provided for liberty,' and reads 'the word hath provided that a man's conscience' . . . 'that deserves very much information to my judgment it is you and none but you that can capacitate me' . . . 'if you will, I say, capacitate me to give it to your selves to receive it and as in the other things that may inform mee a little more particularlie' . . . 'but for the good of the nations' . . . 'our duties to these nations whom we serve.'

### Newsletters

- i. 12. April 12, 1657.- Wednesday<sup>1</sup> the Parliament attended his Highnesse at Whitehall, who told [them] that he had waited upon the Lord for his direction in the last answer he gave them.

<sup>1</sup> April 8. A letter amongst the *Corte MSS.* (ccxxvii, 81) dated April 8, and signed T. B., gives the following account of the situation:

'We went in a Committee yesterday att 11 to attend his Highness, whoe was in his bedchamber under some indisposition of body, as he told us, yet he would endeavour himselfe to meet the house this day att 11 in the banqueting house, or rather at 3 this afternoon, if it stood with the orders of the house and our conveniency.

'All busines whatsoever are utterly excluded till this busines be determined. And I am confident if it take nott, upon this address or the next (which will be more formall, vizt. in the place for passing of lawes and the ultimate refuge), that it will goe nere to dissolve us.

'The royall party are highly dis-contented, and when I speake with some of them seriously in itt, they tell me they never thought to be soe trappand (even of those that pretend a little knowledge to the caball) who had better assurances than every body know on. How the scene is changed it's past my skill to determine, but I feare there is somethinge of feare as well as conscience in the case. And if such influences remaine predominant, it may prove of ill omen to the personall as well as politicall capacity, and of most ill to the nation.

'On this opportunity, and be for ever under an arbitrary lash, and some have not stuck to say soe with much resolution in the House.

'The other party are very crowde<sup>d</sup> and confident, and thought to have surprised us upon the vote on Saturday last, about addressing etc., which was the life of the whole, and never dream'd on by many of us, though designed by them.

'Col: Sidney, who had been 6 weeks from us, and all the dissatisfied party,





to which he saw noe cause as yet to recede from, his conscience and judgement being satisfied therein, and hee ready to give a reason for both, but if hee may be informed more perticular of their reasons then their vote held forth, there will be noe doubt but he may answer that lyes incombent upon him for the good of the 3 nations. Thursday the House impowred a Committee to treat with his Highnes, and to give him reasons to accept of the title, and if his Highnes gives them any, to answer them if they could, else to report them to the House. Fryday his Highnes appointed to meete with the said Committee, but was prevented by a rendezvous intended by the Fifth Monarchy men at three severall places neere London. Notice was given Thursday night where one party of them were with their armes and the standard intended to be set up, it being a Lyon couchant and the motto 'Who shall rouse him up,' besides many thousands of their declaracions ready printed. A troope of horse being sent secured 20 of them in one house with all their armes, ammunition, and horses. It is proved that this designe was laid 2 yeares since, and the intended actors of this bloody tragidy had 3 Committees named, each consisting of 24, out of all which were 12 chosen to carry on the designe with secrecy; it had such influence upon many that commanded both by sea and land, that severall of them threw up their comissions.<sup>1</sup> Major

came thronging in with their negatives, and thought to have carryed it cleare. Some telle that they have a further designe to discredit this modell, by bringing in one of their owne more illustrious, and more answering the ends propounded. It would doe well, if we could come to a settlement at any hand, but its hardly to be hoped for, if this fayle. Sword dominion is too sweet, to be parted with, and the truth is (whatever kind of squeezynes we may pretend to) that the single issue, the maine dread is, that the civill power shall swallow up the military: there's a Demetrius in the case I doubt.

'By the next I hope we shall know more certainly the result, for its nott a busines will keep, and if we have a house of Lords the names will be knowne pre-ently after the bill pass. All the old Lords that have not forfeited by delinquency will be restored; the rest are butt only guess't att, the first list I have or heare of you shall have itt.

'April 8, 1657.'

<sup>1</sup> See Thurloe, vi. 1-4.



Generall Harrison, Collonel Rich, Mr. Courtney, Collonel Danvers, and Vice Admirall Lawson are already secured; Collonel Okey and others are sent for. This day his Highnes and the Committee began their conference. Munday the House considers of the afforesaid printed declaracion, and the persons that are ingaged in that designe. The breach betweene France and Holland is confirmed by letters, and that the French have seized on all the vessels and goods of the Dutch. Sir John Reynolds is given out Comander in Cheiffe of the forces lately raysed; what the designe is for certaine is not yett made knowne. The inclosed is the declaracion of the intended insurreccion. Monday<sup>1</sup> his Highnes gives the Committee his reasons.

G. M.

By another thus,—There is a new plott discovered, conceived by the Fifth Monarchy men, which was so farre advanced as that their rendezvouz was to have been shortly; considerable persons are taken vizt. Sir Henry Vane, Harrison, Rich, Okey, and Vice-Admirall Lawson; on Thuresday night there were 24 persons taken in one roome while they were at prayer, and there were found a great many armes and previsions for warre, with a declaration and the reasons of their rising and a forme of Government all in print, and a standard in white taffeta with a couchant Lyon with this motto, ‘Who shall reuze him.’ There is alsoe 10000 men going over for the assistance of the French against the King of Spayne. Lockhart is Generall, and Sir John Reynolds Major Generall.

f 54b. *Westminster, April 30, 1657.*—This day the Parliament have by vote confirmed the Acts and Ordinances of the Long Parliament, with this provision, that no matter conteyned in them or any of them shall tend to the prejudice of this Instrument called the Petition and Advice. They have now dispatched their resolves upon those papers his Highnes gave them. This afternoon a Committee attended his Highnes to receive his tyme for a confer-

<sup>1</sup> April 15.



ence, for which purpose all the late votes are draweing up in order. Wee cannot yet say what the issue will bee, but its thought by many that pressing importunityes upon grounds of necessity will worke an acceptation.

R. W.

*May 2, 1657.*—Friday was a Rendezvous at Blackheath of the six new rayesed regiments, which were very full and compleatly armed, and at their conjunction exprest much joy and resolution by their loud acclamations. Hyde parke was likewise a place of Rendezvous for many thousand of coaches, and most of all the nobility and gentry of the nation in or neare London according to their usuall custome. f. 55b.

*May 7, 1657.*—Yesterday the House sate not, but in the afternoon the Committee usually appointed to write upon his Highnes attended him at White-hall, where hee told them hee would meet the House this day in the Painted Chamber at eleven of the clock, and give them an answer to the Petition and Advice, but upon further consideration he sent the morning to the Committee to desire that meeting might bee excused, and that they would bee at White-hall this afternoon at five of the clock, whither they came accordingly, and stayed three howers before his Highnes came to them, and when he came he onely excused his absence, and desired a conference with them to morrow morning at eight of the clock before the House met, at which time hee sayd hee would deliver himselfe so to them, as he hoped hee should put them to no further trouble in this businesse.

Thos: C.<sup>1</sup>

*May 9.*—Thursday his Highnesse sent a message to the House, that hee could nott that day meete them in the Painted Chaamber according to former appointment, but desired that the Committee might come that evening to him about 5 of the clock, which they did accordingly, when his Highnes desired them to acquaint the House that if they pleased hee would meet them to morrow in the Banqueting House, Whitehall, about ten of the clock in the

<sup>1</sup> Thomas, Clarges (?).



morning. In the interim severall of the officers of the army met, and agreed upon a petition to the Parliament, which was delivered yesterday by Lieutenant Colonel Mason, Lieutenant Colonel Goffe, and severall other officers of the army, but not read, who were call'd in, and own'd the petition, wherein they prayed that the Parliament would forebore to press his Highnes to any further answer concerning their Petition and Advice, he haveing given them [?] his reasons why he cannot accept thereof.<sup>1</sup> The House then attended his Highnes, whose spake as followeth.<sup>2</sup>

t. 67. May 15, 1657.—Since his Highnes's late refusall of the title of King, the House has from day to day adjourned upon what should be the question of these three.

1. Whether in course the advice should altogether be layd aside with the government and title indissolubly?

2. Whether since the government profered by the humble advice of the House, being in it self so perfect and necessary for the happines of the people, may not be retayned, and some other title fallen upon which may be more acceptable?

3. Whether the present title of Protector may not be fit to be retayned, with the new perfect advice of government, and such thinges as may be therein conceived inconsistent with this title may not be expunged, as House of Lords and such like, and the whole remnant remayne?

t. 68. May 16, 1657.—Munday the House spent in debate upon the bill for probate of wills and granting administracions, and order'd the same to bee ingros'd. Tuesday<sup>3</sup> the Speaker had strenght only to make a short report of his Highnes's last answer to the Parliament, but could not sit soe long as to heare any debate thereupon, soe the House adjourn'd till the next morning, but satt in a Grand

<sup>1</sup> Thurloe, vi. 281; Ludlow's *Memoirs*, ed. 1894, ii. 25-28.

<sup>2</sup> Thurloe, vi. 267; *Clarendon's Journals*, vii. 533. Carlyle's *Cromwell*, speech xiv. The version in the *Clarke Papers* agrees with that given in the *Journals*.

<sup>3</sup> May 12. An account of the debate on the petition of the officers is given in a letter from Major Mordaunt to Henry Cromwell, printed in a note to Ludlow's *Memoirs*, ed. 1894, ii. 26.





Committee upon the bill of Assesments. It was againe mov'd that the breach of previlidge by the last petition of some officers of the army might bee debated, but nothing don there upon. Wednesday, Thursday, and Fryday, the House debated the great bussines of his Highnes' last answer; some mov'd for an adjournment, others for a new title, some for letting of the debate fall, and [to] consider of passing such bills as may bee for the good of the three nacions. But in all that time they were soe farr from coming to a result that they could never agree upon the stating of the question, soe that yesterday they ajorned the House and the further debate thereupon till Tuesday morning next. There [are] 3500 of the new raised forces landed in France, the rest are speedily to bee with them.

G. M.

*May 21, 1657.*—Since the late result of the Parliament for L. 70. establishing the government under the title of Protector, the Committee have had some consideration and debate about circumsanciating the thing soe, that the ancient lawes [and] the present title and government may have familiarity and good correspondence each with other for the better clearing and security of all just interests, but it is observed that to enumerate [?] rules and circumstances in that case will bee difficult, if not endles, therefore it hath bin mouved as the shortest and securist course, rather to couch all under one generall head or article, then to run into many particulars, viz. to this purpose, that the fonnaddementall lawes of the nacion shall run in their direct and proper channell, and be construed [?], deemed, and taken to have as full force, effect, and vertue to all intents and purposes, under the title of Protectour as supream magistrate, as under the title of King, and that his Highnes' power and authority shall bee equevolent, and its supposed some what of this nature wilbe resolved on. That pe[titi]on signed by some of the army officers, and presented to the Parliament that morning his Highnes gave his last answer, slipt into the presse with a post-script (as they say) inviting two out of each regiment in the army



to owne and subscribe itt, which in this juncture of time was disgusted on all hands, and there being some examined about it utterly disowne that postscript or printing of it, and infering itt hath bin done by some on purpose to lay them under a prejudice, however the same is supposed, and sayd that the generall counsell of officers declare against it.<sup>1</sup> Sir John Reynolds wee heare with the last part of the 6000 [soldier, ?] is landed in France.

R. W.

### An Officer in Flanders to General Monk<sup>2</sup>

1. 73. May 26, 1657.—I cannott give your Lordshippe see exact an account of affaires heere as I could wish, all thinges in generall being in an hands are a pypage, our army consists of 6000 foote, officers included, and have been very civilly treated by order from the King and Cardinall. Wee have our ammunition bread with five souses per diem for each soldier, and are come thus fare into the country, haveing lodged in the strongest townes in France, as Montrule, Rue &c. The beeres quitt their houses, and fly to the woods with their fasses, killing and robbing all they meet with whether English or French, they are above 5000 Between Montruse and Abliville; wee have lost 3 or 4 men, and severall stripped; our men (blessed be God) are hitherto healthfoll, and likely through God's assistance to doe our country service. It's reported the French are above 30,000, yet the Spanyard have raysed from before Cambre which they intended to besiege. Water is so scarce here that wee marched Saturday last above 10 miles without one drop. The Cardinall presents us with both wine and beere at each town wee come to. Our landing in Bolonia has been very usefull, in regard wee have kept the country and town of Bologne (where the first 3000 of us quartered) very

<sup>1</sup> See Thurloe, vi. 291, 310; and *Scotland and the Protectorate*, Scottish History Society, 1899, p. 374.

<sup>2</sup> The original is untraced, but the author was probably either Major-General Morgan or Lieut. Col. Hughes. See pp. 116, 124.



steddy, being in a wavering condition before, and ready to revolt. Our Ambassador has been with us, and tells us he hath an assurance wee shall bee constantly paid according to the under-written establishment; the sergeants and corporalls (he hopes) will have an augmentacion. Wee find a great want of cheese, which I hope will bee supplied, brown bread and water being strange to our soldiers. The Thesaurers niggle with us already, and stop 2 souses for each pistoll they pay us, and will not cleare any moneths with us, but supply us on accompt that in the end they may cheat us as they please, but I hope our Generall and Embassadour will prevent it. The King and Cardinall are gone to Peroon to advise with the Marshalls Turein and La Perte which way to steere, their designe on Cambre being broke; our stay will bee herabouts till they resolve.

#### The Establishment.<sup>1</sup>

	per alien livres souds.
The Commander in Cheife . . . . .	30 ... 00.
Phisitian . . . . .	06 ... 13.
Collonell . . . . .	12 ... 00.
Lieutenant Collonell . . . . .	06 ... 00.
Major . . . . .	05 ... 00.
Minister . . . . .	03 ... 00.
Chyrurgeon and mate . . . . .	03 ... 00.
Quartermaster . . . . .	02 ... 00.

Marshall 2 livres. Captain 5 livres. Lieutenant 2 livres and 10 souses. Ensigne 1 livre and 15 souses. The Farrier 16 souse. Each Sergeant 10 sou-e. Each Corporall 7 souse. Each soldier 5 souse, besides their ammunition bread.

London, 26 May, 1657.—Yesterday his Highnesse att a conference with the Parliament in the Painted Chamber declared his assent to the Petition and Advice after this manner. The Speaker lett his Highnesse know that the Parliament by him againe

<sup>1</sup> Thurloe, vi. 297; Guizot, *Cromwell and the English Republic*, ii. 368.



presented those papers relating to the government, with the alteration of that paragraph concerning the title, together with their resolves circumstantiating the same, wherein the Parliament humbly expected and desired his Highnes' consent; and the same being read his Highnes expressed himselfe in this manner, 'I consent, I consent'; which the Clerk of Parliament writt upon the bill in these words, 'the Protector contenteth,' and read it. And after a little pause his Highnes made a short speech, shewing that he came not thither in tryumphe when he considered how great and insupportable weight he set his shoulder to in this worke, and such as he must inevitably sinck under, if the Lord should not by an extraordinary power support him. Hee also implored their helpe (who represented the people) further to advise and consult upon such things as might tend to consummate and firmly establish that great worke, not doubting of the same, with many emphaticall expressions. Your Lordship will have the speech at large from one who would have lent it mee to transcribe, but that it was presently forth of his hands.<sup>1</sup> This day the House ordered to assume the consideration of the explanatory bill to morrow, viz<sup>t</sup>. that which condemnes severall resolves as to the addition of 600000<sup>l</sup> per annum to the revenue for 3 yeares and other particulars, which being done they will be both published shortly.

R. W.

June 20.— . . . Being informed that the trepanners and gamesters about the Towne had drawne in 100 of the young

<sup>1</sup> The version of this speech given in the *Clarke Papers* agrees with that in the *Commons' Journals*, vii. 594, not with that in Thurloe, vi. 309. There are, however, the following trifling differences between the *Clarke MS.* and the speech printed in the *Journals*. The *Clarke MS.* reads:

' . . . I believe that the same spirit,' l. 26.  
' . . . testified your forwardnes,' l. 33.  
' . . . to satisfy my conscience and judgment,' l. 37.  
' . . . and such various bound,' l. 51.  
' . . . if God shall not thus visit us as thankfull,' l. 55.  
' . . . in the least as doubting it,' l. 63.





nobility and gentry of this nation into statutes, bonds, judgements etc. to the value of 500,000<sup>li</sup>, by advice of Comceill I drew up a bill for punishing such as live at high rates and have noe visible estates, and for making voyd all securityes given for monyes lost at play since the yeare 1617, which the House read this day with much satisfaction. . . .

G. M.

*July 1, 1657.*—Wednesday the Lord Maior and Aldermen met f. 92b. in greate state his Highnes' Comceill at Temple Bar, attended by the lifeguard, his Highnes' gentlemen, all the heraulds, and very many trumpetts; over against Chancery Layne and in Fleetestreet they read the Peticion and Advice (inclosed), and proclaimed his Highnes with greate solemnity; the like in Cheapeside and over against the Exchange in Cornhill. Yesterday there happened a very sad accident in Cutters neere the Tower by firing 150 barrells of gunn powder, which blew up 15 houses, kild 2 children in an Abecarian scoole house, and 8 other persons; it happen'd thus, one Cox, the master of the powder howse in Dewell filds, being in drinke, and requiring his servant to break up a granado hee refused, whereupon hee tooke up a hammer, and was resolved to doe it himselfe, at which the servant runn away, and before he could gitt fify yards from the powder house his Master with the house was blowne up. It hath prejudiced above 100 houses more, by breaking their windows, and blowing of their tyles and ruffecast. Major Generall Harrison, Collonell Rich, and Vice-Admirall Lawson are by his Highnes' order lett att liberty. The time of his Highnes' going to vizite Portsmouth and Dover with other parts is not yet knowne. Wee have a flecte of 60 sayle going to rendezvouz in the Downes, greate store of pickaxes and shovells are sent to them.

G. M.

*July 18.*—This day sennight his Highnesse had much private f. 99. conference with the Ld Lambert, and Thursday last Mr Jessop, one of the clerkes of the Comceill, was sent to the Lord Lambert's



house at Windledon for his Lordship's Commission, which was delivered to him, and afterwards to his Highness<sup>1</sup> . . .

- f. 101b. *July 25, 1657.*—The excise and customes of goods imported into England (excepting ale and beere) are farmed at 500000<sup>li</sup> per annum by Alderman Dethwicke, Alderman Fredricke, Alderman Tems,<sup>2</sup> Mr. Martin Noell, Mr. Ford, Mr. Banks, and others. Thursday last the councill sat; Colonel Sidenham and Majour Generall Skippon tooke there oath, and were admitted into the Councill. Sir Gilbert Pickering, Sir Charles Owsely,<sup>3</sup> and Colonel Jones, are not come out of the country. The Councill past severall orders for the pay of the army, and for making provisions ready for the fleet which lye yet in the Downes. The Lord Cleappole his father was created Barronet, and afterwards received the honour of knight[h]ood. The Lord Lamber's regiment of foote is given to the Lord Fleetwood, who is said to bee Lieutenant Generall of the army, and Generall Disberrough, Generall of the horse. The Councill refer'd it to a Committee of officers to consider of a reducement of the pay of the army, who have thereupon ordered that the place of Scounte Master Generall, Quarter Master Generall, and one of the Adjutant Generall; bee hereafter reduced, and likewise the traine, and 100 out of every regiment of foote, whereby the sume of 100000<sup>li</sup> per annum is retreneld; they have in this report desired that his Highnes would bee pleased to take care of those officers whose pay is reduced, they having faithfully served the publique. Yesterday Collonell Sexby (disguised in a very poore habit, and with an overgrowne beard) was taken on shipp board going out of the nacion, and after a short examinacion by his Highnes was sent prisoner to the Tower.

- f. 105. *August 11, 1657.*— . . . Since the publishing the act for gaming for money (which hath rooted all the rauting crew out of the city) many desperate robberies are committed frequently neare it.

<sup>1</sup> See 3rd Report Hist. MSS. Comm. p. 237, for Cromwell's letter demanding Lambert's Commission.

<sup>2</sup> Nathaniel Temes.

<sup>3</sup> Wolseley.



Generall Blagüe being safely returned for England with some of the fowlest vessells in the fleet, in a very weake condition in body, haveing for 12 moneths last past been onely nourished with broaths, jellyes, and cordials, ended his most honourable life the 7<sup>th</sup> instant, within a league of his landing at Plymouth; his corps are comeing up to London in order to an interment answerable to his never to be forgotten merits. Major Generall Skippon is this weeke to be marryed to one Barronet Phillips his widdow, a person of much piety and goodnesse. The excise for all England is left save for 3 countyes. It amounts already to neare 1200,000<sup>li</sup> per annum, besides Ireland and Scotland. The farmers advance some a ninth, others a 10<sup>th</sup> part, besides good security and a moneths pay beforchand. There is to bee of the other House 12 of the old nobility of England, 6 to serve for Ireland, and 6 for Scotland. His Highnes' Councell here are to bee created Barons. A waterman's wife of Westminster was yesterday delivered of 1 lusty children, who are all living, but she is dead. His Highnes came not this day from Hampton Court, so that the Councell sate not.

G. M.

*Aug. 18.*— . . . Two gentlemen of Shropshire, younger sons f. 107. of ancient popish families, having bin taken by Major Waring High-sheriff there tampering to list horse, their commissions of fresh date (vizt. of the 31<sup>th</sup> of March) were alsoe taken with them, and upon examination they confesse they were with Charles Stuart in Aprill last, and had assurance that after the end of this cam-paigne the Spanish party would furnish him with a considerable force to land in England, with which they should bee ready to joine. They were sent to the Tower, and others in Yorkshire and elsewhere are looked after.



## Major-General Morgan to General Monck

f. 108b.

*August 24.*— Since our coming into France wee have had many hard marches, and being run in arreare of pay for 6 weeks together, our men being forced to subsist onely with their amunition bread, water, and trowte, it hath brought them into a greafe weakenes, and much discouraged them, in soe much that they make all the shifts they can to gitt into England, notwithstanding wee take all the care possible; but just now I have received assurance there will come a month's pay to us to morrow, which I hope will much incorage them, and hinder their combination for running away. The French army together with the English forces have had the upper hand of the Spaniard every where in France and Flanders this yeare, and though both armies have oftentimes bin very neere together, yet the enemy never durst stand to an engagement. Upon the 17<sup>th</sup> instant (stilò novo) wee beleaguered a towne called St. Venant upon the edge of Flanders, and the Spanish army together with the Prince of Condee, camp't within a mile of us fower dayes together, but never durst attempt to relieve the towne; onely our horse had continuall skirmiges with them out of the lyne, and then they drew off, and marcht to a garrison of the King of France's called Ardres, within 4 leagues of Boloingne, which they beleaguered, but in the meane time wee were not idle at our sidge before St. Venant, hastening that wee might goe to the reliefe of Ardres. Soe that on the 26<sup>th</sup> following, Providence ordered me to march into the trenches with 600 men, and to carrie one the point of the trench to the barricado which entered upon the point of the counterescarf. And having lodged 80<sup>1</sup> men to worke into the ground there, wee had a hott dispute with the enemy, the English corage with the rest of the 600 men to see us iugaged moued them to leape out of the trenches, and to come up

<sup>1</sup> Fifty men according to Morgan's narrative and the adjdgment of his letter in *Mercurius Politicus*.





to us where wee were all upon plaine ground, but our men shouting, firing, and crying 'fall on,' made mee indeavour to gitt over the enemies barricadoe and turnepike, which was soone broake open with the barrell of a muskett, and soe wee entred within their counterscraff, and fell upon an halfe moone which was moted, and made the enemy quitt it and enter the towne, soe that wee wrought our selves into a security, and our losse was 10 men killed, and not 20 wounded. Myselfe received a slight shott in the arme, which blessed bee God is since recovered together with most of our wounded men. Marshall Turin with most of the nobillitie in the army have had a high respect for us ever since. But indeed for the common and ordinary sort they are soe blasphemous and vile both in words and actions, that it would make any that feare God unwilling to reside (?) among them. If I had wings, and God would permit mee to fly for an hower or two to Dalkeith, I should acquaint your Lordship with many passages which I must omit at this time. As soone as St. Venant was yelded wee drew of, and marcht night and day towards the releife of Andres, but the enemy hearing wee were within halfe a dayes march of them, notwithstanding they had finished 3 mines and were redy to lodge the powder in them, yet they were danted, and durst not stay our coming, but marcht of, and left many of their men to the mercie of the garrison, and marcht downe by Gravelin and Dunkerke into Flanders, soe that wee are like to have noe farther action this yeare, save only to lye upon the borders of Flanders till the beginnyng of October to waite what the enemy will doe at the latter end of the yeare.

J. Mo.<sup>1</sup>

<sup>1</sup> The signature should be T. not J. Mo. The letter is evidently by Major-General Thomas Morgan, and it exactly confirms the account of the siege of St. Venant given by him in his narrative. See 'A true and just Relation of Major-General Sir Thomas Morgan's Progress in France and Flanders,' *Harleian Miscellany*, ed. Park, iii. 342. On the siege of St. Venant, see also Thurot, vi. 480, 487, and Bouché, *Deux Campagnes de Turenne*, 1686, p. 27, and *Mercurius Politicus*, September 3, 1657, pp. 1590, 1597.



## Newsletters

*August 25, 1657.*— . . . Major Generall Skippon was this day married to Baron[et] Phillipps widow. His Highness hath bin at Hampton Court ten dayes together, her Highness not being well, and himselfe in a course of phisick, soe that the Councell have not sat in all that time. The funerall of Generall Blacke is deferred till tomorrow sonnigh. The Lord Richard Cromwell hath brooke his thigh by a fall in hunting, but it is sett again, and his lordship in a hopefull way of recovery.

f. 110. *September 2.*—This day his Highness returned from Hampton Court after a fortnight's residence there. . . .

f. 112. *September 8.*—Thursday last <sup>1</sup> his Highnesse, with severall of his Councill, and many officers of the army, kept att Hampton Court a day of Thankesgiving for the never to bee forgotten victories at Dunbar and at Worcester. Friday Generall Blacke's corpes were interred in Henry the 7<sup>th</sup>'s chappell, attended in greate state by severall of the Councell, Comissioners for the Admiralty, officers of the army and navy, Lord Mayor and Aldermen of London, and many other persons of quallitie, in the states barges and all those belonging to the severall companies of London; those with small boutes covered [the] Thames from the Tower to Westminster bridge, where great gunns plaid all along, and after interment the land forces made very many laudable volleys.<sup>2</sup> The Portugall Imbassador has had audience,<sup>3</sup> he desires ayd against the Spaniard. His Highnes allowes our forces 2<sup>d</sup> per diem in France<sup>4</sup> besides the French pay. Mr. John Goodwin hath bin twice before the Councell for publishing his last booke. The farme of excise is not yett finished. 2000 men are raising for Sweden under the command of George Lord Fleetewood. G. M.

<sup>1</sup> September 3.

<sup>2</sup> Cf. *Mercatorius Politicus*, p. 1606, where there is a fuller account of Blake's funeral.

<sup>3</sup> The Portuguese Ambassador had audience on September 2 and September 9 according to *Mercatorius Politicus*.

<sup>4</sup> MS. 'France.'



## A Letter from Flanders

*September 10, 1657.*—The French army is rampant, and might doe my Lord Protector service if they had butt zeale to itt. Since our coming into Flanders with 26,000 horse and 15,000 foot with an innumerable traine, the horses and mules belonging to it being nigh 40000, and the waggons 16000, we entered at Marvit<sup>1</sup> into Flanders by three bridges made with boates over the Lys, and have taken Montebuy,<sup>2</sup> and since we marched as far as Berghen, two leagues from Dunkirke, where Don [John] and Condé lay incamped, who gave a check to our forces, and caused us to withdraw and attempted the river at Watten Abbey (a monastery of English Jesuites), where we gained one forte, and are now before another, and then they promise to besiege Mardike, but we thinke the season of the yeare will admitt of nothing else. However they are not idle for themselves, for they have settled contributions as far as Brussels on our coming into this countrey. They set up at Gaunt the Black Standart, which was not out in 17 yeares; it betokens a generall summons of all betweene 16 and 60. The Spaniards are not only low, but also cowed. Don Jon is gon into Dunkirke with 3000, Condé is at Berghen with 5000 horse and 2000 foote, Graveling hath 1000 foote in it, and Mardike as full as it can hold, soe that their is little good to be expected.<sup>3</sup> f. 113.

*Sept. 22.*—2000 souldiers out of the severall foote regiments in and neere this citty (under command of Col. Gibbons and Major Keame as Lientenant Colonell) fell downe this day to Gravesend in order to their speedy voyage to Dunkirke. f. 115.

*Sept. 29.*—The Lord Lambert's services are referred to the consideration of a committee of the Councell, who are to prepare the draught of an act to bee offered to the Parliament for settling a considerable estate upon him. For the interim his Highness is f. 116.

<sup>1</sup> Marville, upon the Lys.

<sup>2</sup> Montauboy, according to *Mercurius Politicus*.

<sup>3</sup> On these movements see Thunee, vi. 523; *Mercurius Politicus*, pp. 16, 2, 1657; and Bourelly, p. 37.



pleased for his Lordship's present support to continue the pay upon his late commission. . . .

### Letters from Flanders

- f. 117. *October 3, 1657. Route before Dunkirke.*—Itt hath indeed bin intended by the French army to lay siege to Dunkirke, and in order therunto a campest hath bin made of the sconce Mardyck, which did nott indure siege above 2 dayes before itt yielded uppon discretion,<sup>1</sup> but since the taking thereof the resolution of besieging Dunkirk beginneth to slacken, and I suppose will bee quite layd aside for this year, partly by reason of the hard season of the yeare, and partly of scarcity of provision for the horse which are numerous in the French army.<sup>2</sup> The said sconce of Mardick is such indeed as may be sufficiently maintained against a storme or sudden surprise, but may easily bee gained by one weekes approaches; therefore it is thought necessary to renew an old outworke, which of old times hath bin annexed to the said sconce, but since demolished againe by the Spaniards. This outworke when it is made upp againe will consist of three bullworks, and the capacity will afford accomodacion for 2000 foote more, which together with those that are in the sconce will make a sufficient guard to frustrate any attempt that the Spanish army can make upon their places this Winter; onely it will bee a worke of greate difficulty to repaire the aforesaid ruinous worke, and to make a sufficient number of lodgings for soe numerous a companie, and that in soe short a time. For the French army, which is now remooved from hence for want of provisions higher into the country, hath promised to come downe againe, and to give ten dayes attendence about the said sconce, that under their protection and their helpe the worke may be furthered.
- J. H.<sup>3</sup>

<sup>1</sup> See *Mercatorius Politicus*, p. 1664, September 24–October 1, and October 1–8, p. 7.

<sup>2</sup> See Thurloe, vi, 525, 526, 547, 579.

<sup>3</sup> This letter is probably by Jeremiah Hanc. See Thurloe, vi, 538, 547.





*Dunlirk, October 6, 1657.*—Since the taking of Mardicke it f. 118.  
was intended wee should besidge Graveling but there fell such  
raynes which filld all the ditches, which together with a high spring  
tide and the enemyes sluses drowned all the country, which caused  
the army to quitt the low country; 3 of our battallions were left (by  
lot) at Mardicke, 3 at Bourboregh, and the other six (wherein I am)  
marcht last night in hopes to goe neere Calis to refresh our selves,  
but I suppose wee must returne (as bad as the whether is, for wee  
cannott march one halfe day with out a greate loss of our men),  
to fortifie Mardick.<sup>1</sup>

### Vice-Admiral Goodson to General Monck [?]

Our French file leaders have marcht the wronge way to gott f. 119b.  
Dunlirke this yeare. Truly Sir, our pre sent enemy notwithstanding  
his Indyces is butt poore. As to his plate fleete itt may bee  
resembled to a great basin and ure in a lottery, where many blankes  
are drawne before itt's gott. As for Flanders itt hath bin a great  
draine to the Spanish purse, I wish itt may [not] bee soe to  
England's.

There is a pretence of the French sitting downe before Dun-  
kirke, or Graveling this yeare: or at least their returne to Mardyke  
for the making some additionall workes to make itt the more  
tenable. W. G.<sup>2</sup>

Dover. In Mardyke Pitts.  
8 October 1657.

### A Letter from France

From *Callis, October 13, 1657.*—The armie lies betweene Ardes f. 119b.  
and Watten to secure the fortifying of Bourbourgh and the out-  
workes att Mardyke. Marshall Thurene hath bin with our

<sup>1</sup> See Thuroloe, vi. 517, 518, 550; and *Mercatorius Politicus*, pp. 37, 48, for the  
progress of the forces in Flanders. This letter is doubtless by the author of  
the letter of October 13 and November 1.

<sup>2</sup> Vice Admiral William Goodson in Cal. State Papers, Dom. 1657-58, p. 138.



Ambassador and Generall this afternoone, which hastens the Ambassadour for London this night.<sup>1</sup> Charles Stuart come 3 nights agoe to Dunkirk, and on Satterday at night Don John sent out 700 horse to allarme Mardick, and man'd a greate many boates and a fire shipp with a resolucioe to fire our shipping that were within the Splinter, but one of our friggats perseaving their designe discharged severall guns among them, which forced them back (4 considerable persons being slayne); most of them that came by sea were drunck, but such as came by land frightened our men soe much that they quitted the counterscarf, and retreated to the foss border[?] very unworthily, which is a greate trouble to many; the fault must bee in some officers, for where they stand the souldiers never flie. Wee have abundance of sick men, and are likely to bee more, for sicknes is here very rife; it takes them with giddines in the head, and distracts, many swellings in the legs and joynts, violent feavours, and agues of all sorts; severall dye dayly by reason of ill accommodacion and the slight care the French take of us. If wee be able to keepe Burghburgh and Mardick, Gravelin must of nescessity yeild in the Spring, for it is in a manner besidged. The court is at Metz in Lorraine attending close the elecion, and the Mon-sieurs are in [hope to] ballance the busines against the King of Spaine.<sup>2</sup>

f. 119a.      *October 10.*—Lt. Col. White of his Highness owne regiment went over yesterday Governor to Mardicke, the late Governor Clarke being very sicke.

f. 121b.      *Oct. 26, 1657, Dalkeith.*—This day Capt. Geo. Watkinson and Lt. Foster of Capt. Bradford's troope in M. G. Lilburne's regiment came to the headquarters, being sent for for being Quakers, and testified soe much by their being covered, and expressions of joy

<sup>1</sup> Lockhart arrived at London on October 15, and pp. 54, 70, 80, 84.

<sup>2</sup> This letter was doubtless written by the same officer as that of November 4, which follows p. 124. There was a more serious attack on Mardick on October 22. See *Mercurius Politicus*, under October 24.



for suffering for bearing testimony to the Truth (as they termed it), and were dismissed the Army.

*November 3, 1657.*—The late Lord Maior Titchborne is said to f. 122.  
bee chosen one of the Councill of Scotland and President thereof. The Lord Fairfax hath this last weeke twice attended his Highnes, and the Lady Fairfax on her Highnes, though neither of them did all the time they were here the last summer, notwithstanding the Lord Richard, the Lord Fleetwood, and severall of the Conncell did by his Highnes' command visitt them both. The Dutch Ambasadour preparing to withdraw himselfe from hence, and the newes of our seizing 12 Flemish . . . bottomes occasions a generall report that a new warr is beginning with Holland. This day the Lord Fairfax expected an answer of his applicacion to his Highnes and Conncell, concerning the liberty of his son (the Ducke of Buckingham) till the next session of Parliament, but as yet none is given. The haumes is now asking betweene his Highnes' doughter the Lady Frances and the young Lord Rich. G. M.

### A Letter from France

*November 1.*—The armie are this week disencamping, and will f. 122b.  
bee for their refreshing quarters.<sup>1</sup> Mardyke, Bourbourgh, and severall other fortes which wee built to secure these passages being in a tenable condition, our men of late (though in a mean condition) doe stand stiffly to their tacklings, and repulse the enimie with losse as often as he attempts. We have of one battalian at Mardike,<sup>2</sup> 3 at Bourburgh, and 5 here and the villages adjacent, where the sick of all the army are a very sad spectacle to behold; the Lord comfort them, for we have neither firing, straw, or covering save what we pay for, yet in regard it is for his Highness' service and the interest of England we will cheer-

<sup>1</sup> *Mercurius Politicus*, under November 7 (p. 86), says that Turenne was moving the French army towards Arden for change of quarters.

<sup>2</sup> Four battalions? See p. 121.



fully embrace the greatest hardships, and by God's assistance wade through all difficulties, every one taking his proportion of the work, which in 5 or 6 moneths tyme we hope to overcome, and then the season of the year will promise us better things; in the interim God's will be done.<sup>1</sup>

Lieutenant Colonel Hughes to General Monck

f. 123b.

*November 4, 1657.*—Marshall Turenne is this weeke to disencampe and to lodge his army in their refreshing quarters about Bollogny, for indeed they have endur'd abundance of hard-shippe. All the pallisadoes for Bourbourgh, and for 4 new forts which we built to secure the passages to Mardike, were carried by the horsmen about 7 mile through an extraordinary deepe way, and likewise they goe 7 and 8 miles for forrage, which hath much impoverished these quarters. Our Embassadour was this weeke with Thorin to urge the keeping of Mardike wholly on the French, or at least the government to a French man, and neither was assented unto; yet their was a comission signed and sent to Sir John Renolds (who is in the forte) to keepe the same for the King of France, which he will hardly accept of, unlesse he receives private instructions from his Highnesse theirunto.<sup>2</sup> Our soldiers have gained their old courage, and stand stoutly to their worke, for the enimie approached towards our workes about 10 at night, and lodged themselves very neare the same for 6 houres, but were very gallantly repulsed, and forced to withdraw before day, leaving their faggots, spades, and pick-axes, with some hand granadoes behinde them. Marshall Thurinn receiving the alarm was by day breake with his whole army at Bourbourgh, having marched with incredible speed;<sup>3</sup> his stay thus longe in the feild is to see the works at Mardike and Bourbourgh finished, the last is already tenable. This is a very sickly season, few of either officers or

<sup>1</sup> See *Memoria Ponticus*, Nov. 5-12, 1657, p. 90.

<sup>2</sup> See *Thurloe*, vi. 600, 611, 618.

<sup>3</sup> *Ibid.*, vi. 578.





soldiers escapeing, we bury 7 and 8 every day out of this towne out of 4 battalions, we have 3 Collonells very sick, with abundance of officers and above 1000 soldiers; the Lord support and enable us to wade through these difficulties, it being his Highnesse' service and the interest of our country, which I trust will be compleated in 6 or 7 moneths tyme. The Major Generall (who takes a great deale of paines) is this day sent for to Mardike, I suppose to receive the Generall who will come here for a tyme. The Courto is come to Paris where the Embassadour is repaired; had the French beene at first as zealous for our service as now they seeme to be, they might have fulfilled the treaty without this intollerable toyle, which hath ruined neare halfe their gallant army. R. H.

Given 4 leages from Cullis November 19 1657. Old stile.

Graveline is in a manner blockt up.

### Newsletters

*November 7, 1657.*—The great towne discourse is of the tryall f. 123. yesterday att the Upper Bench betweene young Mr. Dutton and Mr. Colt, who had married one of old Dutton's daughters, and brought a writt of ejection to throw Mr. Dutton out of all except 1000<sup>li</sup> a yeare, uppon pretence of a will made after the settlement which old Mr. Dutton disposed of his estate by to the new young gentleman; touching which bussinesse the triall lasted from morning till 9 att night, and the Judges and Councill never stirr'd, nor few of the hundreds of ladyes and gentlemen and other inquisitive persons that attended the hearing till past 9. And this morning the jury having bin att itt all night brought in their verdict for Mr. Dutton; judging (as indeed all ingennous and impartiall auditors I have yett heard speake agreed) that the pretended will was a forged thinge, and the witnesses of suspected evill fame. And I perceive divers rejoyce that Sergeant Maynard who had 100 *pounds* fee that day, and formerly a coach, and 4 Flanders mares of Mr. Colt, besides all by-fees, hath found himself oblig'd in honour



to retorne the 100<sup>li</sup> againe. All the able Councill in England were retayn'd on one of the sides, and, that together with soe many hundreds of gallants attending most for the sake of Mr. Colt (a great companion of such), and the considerableness of the estate (being for neere 20000<sup>li</sup> a yeare), makes the great noyse.<sup>1</sup>

W. R.

### A Letter from Mardyke

L. 126. *November 8, 1657.*—I have made bold to dispatch these lines to your Lord-shippes hands thereby to impart to your Lordshippe somewhat of our new territories in Flanders, which as yett doe nott excede the bound of Mardyck sence, and though the same bee a place but of a small compass, yett doth our possession thereof put whole Flanders into a great amazement and feare of future events depending thereon. The principall fort of Mardick is but little, and not capable to give accomodation to more then 5 or 600 men, containing not fully halfe an acre of ground within, by reason whereof the forces that can bee quartered in the same are very insufficient for the defence of such a place, that is of soe greate consequence, and situated under the dayly prospect of an enemy. Therefore it hath bin thought fitt to renew and make upp againe those ould ruined works, which heretofore had bin made by the French, but demolished againe by the Spaniards, and those works finished will affoord accomodation for 2000 foote and 200 horse, or for more if need bee. for the safty of Mardick sence doth cheily consist in the strength and number of men, which upon all occasion may be able to keepe of an approaching enemy, which otherwaies in regard of the situation of the sence might easely bee overcome by a dayes approaches. Although his Highness the Lord Protector is to have by agreement Gravelin, Dunkirke, and Mardick, when ever they shall bee taken; yett is his Highnesse by a later agreement not to accept of Mardick alone without Dunkirke, in

<sup>1</sup> On this trial see Thunbe, vi. 610.



reguard whereof his Majesty of France doth take care and is at the charge to maintaine the seence till Dunkirk bee taken, to which end are sent hether 3 regiments of the French army to contribute their helpe for the securing the seence. Yet notwithstanding and I made to beare the greatest burden of our work: my selfe even beyond my abillities, and I should thinke my selfe happy with it if thereby I might but bee able to give contentment to our Comander in Cheife, who misliketh nothing so much as what is either spoken or done by mee, and though he should doe it to the greate prejudice of the State.

F. H.<sup>1</sup>

### Newsletters

*Nov. 17, 1657.* The solemnities of the nuptials Wensday and Thursday last were kept with much privacy and honour, severall of the nobility being then entertained according to their quallitie, and as that occasion required, their joy being answered by the Citties ringing of bells, and by the firing greate gunns at the Tower. The Lord Henry Cromwell is made Lord Deputy of Ireland. The Judges being lately required by his Highnesse to make the forme of writt whereby the intended members of the other House might be called to sit in parliament, their answer was that until his Highness did accept of the title of King noe legall writs could be made, nor house of Peeres constituted.

*Nov. 21.*—Yesterday and today the Councell have spent much time in considering of the members for the other House, but there names are not yet knowne.

*Nov. 25.*—Intelligence of the interview between Sir J. Reynolds and the Duke of Yorke.<sup>2</sup> Part of Col. Salmon's and part of Col. Biscoe's regiments to goe for Mardlyke.

<sup>1</sup> Probably should be signed J. H. His author seems to be an engineer, and Joachim Hane had been sent from Scotland to fortify Mardlyke. See p. 120, note 3.

<sup>2</sup> See *Memoirs of James II.* i. 326; cf. *Thunberg*, vi. 687, 731.



## A Letter from Mardyke

*November 30.*—The state of our garrison is now in a reasonable securitie as from our enemies, who have bin more mercifull to us in lettin us live heere without any great disturbance, then our freinds in England have bin carefull to keepe us alive with such supplies as wee stand in need of; for I have bin heere now this 7 weekes, waiting for timber and boards wherewith wee are to erect houses and lodging for our souldiers, but besides empty promises wee have gott but little hetherto; which neglect makes the condition of the souldiers very miserable, and soe destructive that wee send every day noe les then 10. 12 or more to the grave, for wee have about 2000 men, but have not accomodation for 600 of them, hence the shifts wee make for lodging are very hard and unwholesome, tending to the distraction of many every day. Nevertheles wee hope that our condition will bee much better when wee shall gitt bedding, and those expected materials for the enlargment of our quarters. The enemy keeps his infantry still in a body together betweene Dunkirk and Bergen, with a designe to make a second attempt upon us, but wee heare that all his officers refuse to bee comanded upon any such designe in this Winter season, which doth but promis them but an onprobable suces. In the meane time both f. 131b. army and country are much grieved at our settlement heere, but the more we rejoyce, and wee are sorry they grieve noe more, then our joy would be the greater also. Don John D'Austria wee heere is gone into Holland there to juggle for releefe against the next Summer, for all the infantry hee hath at present is not compleat 4000 men, and it is probable that hee may gitt some of those forces that have bin employed the last Summer against the citty of Munster. Our souldiers that lye up and downe in the French quarters sicken and dye very fast for want of good accomodacion, soe that by the next Spring they will bee reduced to a very small number if they hold on as they doe, neither are the officers exempted from the like distention. Ther dyed heere this weeke





Major Littleton, Captain Floyd, engineers to the English army here, and others. Having nothing to relate but lamentacions I forbare.<sup>1</sup>

J. H.

### Newsletters

*Dec. 1, 1657.*—The regiments here ordered to be recruited, f. 132. and by the Lord Chamberlaine's order no person except members of the councill permitted to goe farther into his Highness lodging at Whitehall than the first guard chamber.

*Dec. 5.*—His Highness delivered some reasons in a paper f. 133. presented to him touching the Duke of Buckingham's liberty, but the Councill thought not fitt to advise his Highness to give him liberty, it being not consistant with his Highness trust or their duty.<sup>2</sup>

*Dec. 9.*—Col. Salmons regiment (all but three companies) and 5 f. 134. companies of Col. Gibbons' regiment are ordered to goe to Mardike. The rich crosses and jewells seized with 8 Jesuites in Covent Garden were this day brought to the Councill. This day the Lord Richard was made one of his Highness Councill. The members of the other House (its said) will not be named.<sup>3</sup>

*Dec. 19.*—An ambassador is come from Florida (a people at f. 139. variance with the Spaniard, and from whence merchants came hither before). hee had noe covering but a thin loose garment, but the merchants have perswaded him into the Spanish habitt. Yesterday his Highness and family set apart a day of humiliation. His Highness sent yesterday to the Citty to prepare a convenient place in or neere Poules church for the quartering of 600 horse and foote for the safety of the Citty.

<sup>1</sup> See Thurloe, vi. 653, 658.

<sup>2</sup> Cromwell was apparently more desirous to oblige Lord Fairfax by releasing Buckhampton, than his Council were. See also Thurloe, vi. 617.

<sup>3</sup> A list of the members, identical with that printed in Thurloe, is given on a later page of the MSS. At the end of it is added: 'The number for the present is but 60, his Highness having left a power to him self to issue out a writt for ten more.'



f. 110. *Dec. 28.*—Christmas day was never more exactly observed by this City then the last, very few or no shops at all being opened therein. Several disaffected congregations mett this day in publike, and had the Common Prayer read unto them by sequestered ministers. After sermons were ended [they] were secured by the soldiers (who were then dispersed in and near the citie to prevent mischief) till the names of all the auditors were taken in writing, and then dismist. Several persons were likewise the night before apprehended at the gaming ordinaries by the soldiers, and brought down prisoners to the garrison of James.<sup>1</sup>

Order was sent to the Lord Mayor to put in execution the Ordinance against observation of holidays. Mr Gannings and Dr Taylor sent for to give account concerning the multitude of people meeting with them. Several persons were ordered to visit the houses where publique meetings were, and give account concerning them.

f. 111. *December 29.*—Some parties of horse are this day sent to Benstead Downes, where was an expectation of att least 2000 horse to bee assembled to a race, and many if nott most of the eminent Cavaleers.

There are daily more of the old Cavaleere partie apprehended and examined, and I heare some of the leaders in the Common Prayer Booke meetings are like to bee fetcht in and secur'd. to prevent the designs promoted under the disguise of such meetings. Att some Churches in the citty there was as bad doinges, for the superstitious and ceremonious parte, as att the private places. Att one church by Garlick Hill I heare they had gott some old choristers and new taught singing boyes, and after the Common Prayer att length in all pontificalibus ended, a young canonically votary went uppe into the pulpitt, and made an oration or sermon (without praying before or after), half of itt Latin sentences, and often taking occasion to mención the name of

<sup>1</sup> John Evelyn was amongst the persons thus arrested. See his *Diary*, ed. Wheatley, ii. 95.



Jesus, hee duck't even to within the pulpitt, and all the people bowed and cringed as if there had bin masse. Neverthelesse I doe nott heere of any disturbance was given to the publique assemblies in Churches, save that att the noted place Gregories in Pauls Churchyard a guard of souldiers was sett att the doores to keepe any from assembling there.

W. R.

### Newsletters, 1658<sup>1</sup>

*London, January 1, 1657.*—Wee have little newes in this place, xxx. f. 1. being a time of negotiation amongst Ministers of State, who cutt out worke for others to doe in the Spring time. There is onely an ill accident fallne out heere of my Lord Howard his Lady, who itt is said is deliver'd of a sonne 13 weekes before for my Lord's account. His brother Phillipp has challeng'd my Lord Bellassis upon that account, who have fought, and my Lord Bellassis is hurt in the left hand, butt seconds did interrupt any further action.<sup>2</sup> Itt appears that this was a mistake, for the Colonell himself and his brother Tom have both taken part to fight some other person in Scotland, whome they have intelligence of.<sup>3</sup> His Highnesse gave orders to apprehend them. My Lord knoweth nothing that his Brother is gone to that same purpose. J. D.

*January 12, 1657.*—A souldier is ordered to be reduced in f. 5. each regiment that keepees guard in any part of the country, and his pay to be applied for fire and candle. 1<sup>l</sup>: 2<sup>d</sup>. per diem ordered to each regiment now quartered at the Mewse for fire and candle, many recusants and other disaffected persons are seized on f. 5b. in the severall counties, and all the regiments of foote here are recruiting. The guards at Whitehall and else where in the City are doubled; the ground hereof is said will suddenly be declared.

<sup>1</sup> The letters which follow are from vol. xxx. of the *Clarke MSS.*

<sup>2</sup> See *Cal. State Papers*, Dom. 1657-58, pp. 258, 551; *Nicoll's Diary*, p. 209; and *Thurlo*, vi. 744.

<sup>3</sup> Lord Rothes.



Colonel Gelle is made Major Generall, and ordered to have his late regiment of foote; his now regiment of horse<sup>1</sup> and that of the Lord Lambert's are to be commanded by the Lord Richard Cromwel and the Lord Faulconbridge.

G. M.

- f. 11. *January 23.*—Wednesday last about 11 in the forenoone his Highnesse came by water to the House formerly call'd the Lord's Hoase, where a canopy and chaire of state was prepared for him. There met him the most of them whom he had appointed to be of that House, save the Lords Say, Wharton, Warwicke, Mulgrave, and some others whom I cannot now name.

After meeting as aforesaid, a message was sent by the Black Rod to the Commons to acquaint them his Highness stayed for them, upon which they presently came to the Bar of that House. Mr. Scobell was then chosen Clerke to the Lords, and Mr. Smith to the Commons, and his Highness standing bare made a short speech, which I took; he stiled them thus:

My Lords and Gentlemen [of] the House of Commons.

The substance of it was, that he met them in that capacitie by their Advice and Petition, acknowledging their great paines and industry to proceed so far to a settlement of our libertyes both civill and religious, and tooke occasion to speake of the former part of the 85<sup>th</sup> Psalme, comparing God's mercyes to us as to them of old. And also made mention of the former bad ministry and the good ministry which is now, and hoped the Lord would still goe alonge with them, that by his assistance they might still be accounted the blessed of the Lord, to be made the repairer of breaches and the restorer of pathes to dwell in. Concludeing that he had some infirmities upon him whereby he could not continue to speake longe, but had desired an honourable person (the Lord Viennes) to discourse a little more pertickularly what might be more proper for that occasion and meeting.

<sup>1</sup> Once that of Col. Sanders. See Clarke, vi. 469, 576.





Presently after which his Highnesse tooke the chaire, and directed all the Lords to sit downe, upon which the Lord Fiens made a speech; his stile to them was this :

My Lords and Gentlemen and both those most Honourable  
Houses of Parliament.

The substance of his speech was declaring the condition wee were in, the mercies we were under, the rocks and dangers and the remedies to avoid them; and lastly the necessity for their assistance in supply of moneys for carrying on the Christian warr already begun.

After he had done the House of Commons retourned to their House and adjourned, and likewise the House of Lords. The Lord Fiens is their Speaker. Both Houses being but in preparation for businesse I cannot give a further account thereof. The House of Commons have appointed Wednesday next for a fast, and Mr. Griffith and Mr. Calamy are to preach before them.

R. HATIER.

Charing Crosse,  
the 23<sup>d</sup> of January, 1652.

*January 21.*— . . . About 200 of the Commons appeared, and L. 13.  
about 10 of the other House, wherein were noe peeres, save the Lord Falconbridge and Lord Ewer. . . . The other House have only named a Committee for privileges, and another to receive petitions, whereof the Lord Pride and John Lord Hewson are members. . . . Lord Lambert and Sir Arthur Haslerigge satt in the House of Commons.<sup>1</sup>

<sup>1</sup> The newsletters amongst the *Clarke MSS.* add further details on the first proceedings of this session of Parliament. The first is dated January 27 :

The great debate about the title of the other House hangs still in linine; when this last day is over we shall come to some resolution in it. I dread the issue; here are very strange spirits come in amongst us, and there are dayly more flocking in; there are 200 sworn, and likely to be a full House, but how longe lived I cannot say. The great Sir Arthur (not yet standing his highness) was elected on Monday last for the Commons among 1000 Commont. Lord Lambert, Sir Arthur Ashley Cooper, Coll. Roeliter, and Baron Thelpe came in at the same tyme. His Highnesse



## Major General Morgan to General Monck

6.11 Of late there hath nothing happened in these parts worthy your knowledge. Here hath bin a very sharpe winter with greate

sent a lette to us on Monday desiring a meeting with both Houses that afternoon in the banquetting house, where he made a very longe and serious speech relative to the state of our affairs, both at home and abroad, our dangers and necessities, inviting us to unite for preservation of the whole.

We have had a very smart debate upon the representation which Mr. Seobell clerk of the other House, sent to us, in answer to our order for delivering the records, bookes, and writings belonging to this House. He pretended he had an Act of Parliament for being clerk, to his lit, and to have the custody of the records, which was very ill resented. It is agreed that his non attendance has forfeited his place, and also the keeping of the records, and such an answer was not expected from a servant. A Committee is appointed to take an inventory of all the bookes, records, and writings, and they are to be delivered to our clerk. Mr. Seobell must buckle, and saye he will not resort so much upon our Honours to appeale to the other. Every thing add to the flame. I confesse I like not the face of affairs. Wee shall either sitt a great while, or rise very soone.—(Clarke MS. ccxxix. f. 46.)

The second, which is addressed to Lord Wharton and signed 'R. B.,' is dated January 30:

'The Commons House have not yet fallen upon anything of publique concernment, declining on purpose till their domesticall fast was over. The firste efforte of the other House was a motion sent downe by two of the judges for concurrence on a publike day of humiliation, which being delivered by them as from the Lords, stirred the passions of some and exercised the wits of others; but in fine ended in a resolution to send an answer by messengers of their owne. In the meane tyme the Protector taking notice of the contumelious of the House by the absence of the seclused Members, invited them by letter to a meeting in the banquetting house, where he made a speech to them, pressing unto unanimittie and representing dangers. I was present at some parte of it, but since I heare that a Committee hath bene sent to desire it may be printed, I shall not presume to give any account of it. Upon their day of humiliation there preached in the Common House Mr. Griffith and Mr. Calamy; in the other Mr. Cayl and Mr. Reynolds. Mr. Griffith upon these words—we know not what to doe but our eyes—His observation was that in tymes of doubt and difficultie it was good to observe providence, instanced in Rahab's closing with the Egyptians, the people with Saul after the businesse of Jabeth Gilead, and with David after his success against Ishoboth, and David concluding the Lord would now establish him when Hiram a heathen king owned him. He made this application to us, and concluded; which was the more taken notice off because he had said a few words before to the honor of the title. Mr. Calamy meddled not with any thing of state, but he wd out of Hagar, and that the ground of



frost, soe that wee are necessitated twice a day to breake the ice to keepe our moates open. These forces since their coming over have endured very much hardshipp, and wee have lost very many by mortallity, soe that our number of English now both at Mardieke and Bourbourg amounts to about 3000. The enemy are recruiting themselves, and give out that in the Spring they will attempt the regaining of this place, but I hope through God's assistance wee shall be able to withstand them. T. M.

Mardiek fort  
8 Feb. 1653. St. No.

### Newsletter

*February 4.*—Yesterday a message came from the Lords' f. 165  
House, desiring the Commons to joine with them in an addresse to his Highness for putting all the Recuants and Delinquents out of the late lines of communication; the Commons returned this answer, that they would send answer to the *other* House by messengers of their owne. This day his Highnesse sent the Black Rod to the Commons, acquainting them that his Highnesse would speake with them in the House of Lords; where he told them that they were farther of from a settlement within 14 dayes last past, then they had beene 11 yeares before; that Charles Stuart was on the other side the River with an army to invade us; that their was an endeavour to infuse ill principles into the army, and to

not succeeding in affayres was the neglect of the Church of God, instanced in 10 or 12 things of that kinde, declared himself by judgment and obligations a Presbyterian that protests againste an imposing spirit on the one hand as a luke warme on the other. When the service was over the next day they began to fall to worke, severall motions were made about priviledges, questioning the seculdors of the members, the tytles of the supreme magistrate, another House. In the issue a motion was made to take in consideration what answer to send to the message sent by the judges, which giving occasion to take in the tytle of the House and their chooser was assented unto, and ordered that noe private businesse should be received for a month, by which the Lord Craven's businesse was putt on, which should have bene heard the next day. The motion aforesaid was made by Sir A. A. C.—(Corte MS. lxxx. 76.)



alienate their affections from him, and likewise to carry out petitions of a dangerous consequence; that they had petitioned him to accept of the government, and that himself never desired it; that they had not performed conditions with him, and that he was not obliged to performe with them; therefore he was necessitated [to put an end to their sitting] and did accordingly dissolve this present Parliament.<sup>1</sup>

G. M.

### Speech of the Protector, February 4, 1658

ff. 17-22. His Highnesse came attended with his Gentlemen and Guard of Halberteirs to the other House of Parliament, and sent the Gentleman Usher with the Black Rodd to call up the Speaker and the House of Commons, who being come to the Barr of the Upper House and his Highnes standing under the canopie of State, he spake to both Houses to this purpose,<sup>2</sup>

‘I had very comfortable expectation that God would make the meeting of the Parliament a blessing, and the Lord be my witnes I desire the carrying on of the affaires of the nation to those ends. The blessing which I meane, and which wee ever aimed at, was mercy, that righteousness and peace which I desire may be improved. That which brought me into the capacity I now stand in was the Peticion and Advice given me by you (meaning the House of Commons), who in reference to the annient constitution did draw me to accept of the place of Protector. There is not a man living can say I sought it, (no, not a man nor woman treading upon English ground), but I contemplating the sad condition of these nations releived from the intestine warr unto 6 or 7 yeares peace, I did thinke the nations happy therein, but to be petitioned there-

<sup>1</sup> On the dissolution of this Parliament see the *English Historical Review*, 1892, p. 102; Thunley, vi. 778, 781, 783.

<sup>2</sup> This speech is number xviii. in Carlyle's collection. It seemed worth printing at length as a specimen of the report in the *Clarke MSS.* and because it differs more than the previous speeches from Carlyle's version.





unto, and advised by you to undertake such a government, a burden too heavy for any creature, and this is to be done by the House who had the legislative capacity, I did looke that the same men that made the frame should make it good unto mee. I can say in the presence of Him in comparison of whom we are but like poore creeping ants upon the earth, I would have been glad to have lived under my wood side to have kept a flock of sheep rather then undertook such a place of government as this is; but undertaking it by the Advise and Petition of you, I did look that you that did offer it unto mee should have made it good.

‘I did tell you at a conference concerning it, that I would not undertake it unlesse there might be some other persons between me and the House of Commons, who then had the legislative power, to prevent tumultuous and popular spirits, and it was granted I should name another House, and I named it of men that should meet you wheresoever you goe, and shake hands with you, and tell you it is not titles, nor Lords, nor party they value, but a Christian and an English interest; men of their own ranke and quality, who would not only be a ballance unto you, but to themselves while you love England and Religion. Having proceeded upon these termes and finding such a spirit as is too much predominate, every thing being too high or too low, when vertue and honesty, piety, and justice, are omitted, I thought I had been doing that which was my duty, and thought it would have satisfied you. But if every thing must be too high or too low, you are not satisfied. . . .

‘. . . I would not have accepted of the government unless I knew there would be a just reciprocation between the governor and the governed; unless they would take an oath to make good what the Parliaments Petition and Advice advised me unto. Upon that reciprocation I tooke an oath, and they tooke an oath upon their part answerable to mine, and did not every one know upon what condition they swore? God knows I tooke it upon conditions expressed in the government, and I did thinke wee



had been upon one foundation, and upon one bottome; and thereupon I thought my self obliged to take it, and to be advised by these two Houses of Parliament. Wee standing unsettled till wee were arrived at [that], the consequence [of] which would have necessarily been confusion if that had not been settled, yet it is not made hereditary Lords nor hereditary Kings, the power consisting in the two Houses and my self. I do not say what <sup>1</sup> the meaning of your oath was to you, that were to go against mine own principles to enter upon another man's conscience, God will judge between me and you, if there were any intention of settlement, you would have settled upon these bases, and have offered your judgement and opinion where you pleased therewith.

‘God is my witness I speake, it is evident to all the world and people living that a new busines hath been seeking in the army against this actuall settlement, by your consent; and I do not speak to these Gentlemen or Lords (pointing to his right hand and left), whatsoever you will call them, I speake not this to them, but to you. You advised me to run into this place, to be in a capacity by your advise, yet instead of owning your oath taken for a grant, some must have I know not what: and you have not only disjoyned your selves, but the whole nation, which is in all likelyhood running into more confusion within these 15 or 16 dayes that you have sat, then they have done from the rising of the last session to this day; through the intention of devising a Commonwealth againe, that some of the people might be the men that might rule all, and they are indeavoring to ingage the army and carry on that thing. And hath that man been true to this nation whosoever, hee especially that hath taken an oath, thus to prevaricate? These designes have been upon the army to breake and divide us, I speak this in presence of some of the army. That these things have not been according to God, nor according to truth, pretend what you will. These things tend to nothing else but the playing the King of Scotts his game, if I may so call him, and I thinke myself bound

<sup>1</sup> what in MS.



before God to do what I can to prevent it. That which I told you in the Banqueting House was true, that there were preparacions of force to invade us, God is my witness. It is confirmed to me since, within a day, that the King of Scots hath an army at the waterside ready to be shipped for England. I have it from those who are eye witness of it. And whilst that is doing there are endeavours from some who are not farr from this place to stir up the people of this town into a tumulting, what if I said, into rebellion, and I hope I shall make it appeare to be no better, if God assist me. That it is not only by endeavours to prevent the army (whilst you have been sitting), and to draw them to state the question of a Commonwealth, but are also list'ing of persons by Commission from Charles Stuart to joyne with any insurrection that may be made; and what is like to come up in this (the enemy being ready to invade us), but present ruine, blood, and confusion. And if this be so, and that I do assigne it to this cause, even to the not assenting to that you did invite me to by the Peticion and Advise (that might have been the settlement of the nation). And if this be the end of your sitting, and these be the carriage, I thinke it high time that an end be put unto your sitting. And I do declare to you I do dissolve this Parliament, and let God judge between mee and you.' To which end many of the Commons cryed Amen. And so the Parliament was dissolved.

### Newsletters

*February 9, 1657.*—On Saturday his Highnesse called together f. 18.  
all the officers of the Army that could redily bee warned about the  
towne, and it's said there were 200, to whom hee spake in a very  
large discourse of about two houres; upon the conclusion whereof  
they gave a plauditory acclamation, and some of them I have spoken  
with say it gave a generall satisfaction to them all. There is some  
uncertainty in the reports and apprehensions about Major Packers  
being discharged or not from his command, upon the dissatisfaction  
declared by him, Capt. Gledman, and some other officers of that



regiment; but in regard Major Browne, who had formerly bin Major to the same regiment, was last night with his Highness, and order given to prepare a commission for him, it seemes probable it may bee in Major Packer's place! . . . . W. R.

Secretary Thurloe to General Monck

4. 20. *February* 12, 1657. Honourable Sir,

His Highnesse hath bin employed this weeke in the settling of some of his Regiments heere, and particularly of his owne Regiment commanded by Major Packer, who having had some discourse with his Highnesse the last weeke expressed much dissatisfaction as to the present affaires, and said all his Captaines were of the same minde, and that they had rather gone before him therein then that he had led them into it; whereupon his Highnesse sent for the Major and five Captaines, and discoursed with them at large, who all declared their dislike of the present Government, and made severall objections to it, and seemed to speake of the goodness of a Comonwealth. His Highnesse tooke much paines with them to satisfie their scruples, and gave them tyme to thinke upon what he had said to them; and after three or four dayes consideration, he sent for them againe, and spake with them in the presence of above twenty officers, and wished them to propound the grounds and reasons of their dissatisfaction in the presence of their fellow officers, but Major Packer said that they had already propounded them, and had considered of what his Highness had said to them, but that their dissatisfactions did still remaine with them; which is all the answer they would give at that tyme, and at two other tymes after wherein his Highness laboured to satisfie them, save that they all said that they were willing still to continue in the army, and follow his Highness upon the grounds of the old cause, but would not expresse what they meant by the old cause. After four or five tymes discourse in this manner, his Highness being utterly unsatisfied with their answers, dismissed them all from their

<sup>1</sup> See Thurloe, vi, 796, 799, 793, 796.





commands, vizt. Major Packer, Captain Gladman, Captain Malyu, Captain Barrington, Captain Spinage, and Captain Leut. Hunter; these are all Anabaptists. J. THURLOE.

*February 13, 1657.*—Commissarie Generall Whalley hath bin for some time made Lt-Generall of the Horse.<sup>1</sup> Sir Gilbert Pickering hath his staff and key delivered to him to be Lord Chamberlaine. . . . Its expected that all the chiefe officers should declare them selves, and in pursuance thereof Col. Cabbett, Col. Mitchell, and Col. Talbot have declared to continue their faithfull service to his Highness, being satisfi-yed with what hath bene done.<sup>2</sup> . . . Heres a general report of calling another Parliament in six monthes, but no order is yet passed for the purpose. A month's pay is now i-suing for the army, and 6 weekes more within this fortnight. His Highnesse's great care of the army doth much indolge both officers and soldiers. G. M.

*February 18, 1657.*—The tem phesitians present at the open- f. 25.  
ing the corps of Mr. Rich unanimously agree that he died of the disease commonly called the King's evill, his lungs being all knotted therewith; his body is removed to Warwick House, his grandfather the Earle of Warwick taking order for the solemnity of his funerall. One of his Highnesses neeces dyed also the same night, viz. Mrs. Levina Whetstone, Major Beakes lady.<sup>3</sup> Wee heare of noe new officers yet settled in the roome of those who are displaced. W. R.

*February 23, 1657.*—His Highnesse hath att sea of all sorts of f. 30b.  
shippes in service about 116. The Kinge of France intends to

<sup>1</sup> It had been reported that De Browe was to have this post: Thurloe, vi, 790.

<sup>2</sup> See Thurloe, vi, 306.

<sup>3</sup> Richard Fole of Haddenham, Bucks, married February 7, 1655, Levina Whetstone (or Whitstone) daughter of Roger Whetstone, of Whittlesea in the Isle of Ely, by Catharina daughter of Robert Cromwell. Vide *Some particular relations to Col. Richard Bole* by C. F. Fole, 1892.



march with an army of 50,000 to the election of the Emperour. His Highness consults dayly about raising of money, but I cannot heare of a word mooved for another Parliament, and when a Parliament shall be called, I conceive their will not be any representative of Ireland or Scotland. All things both in cittie and country are quiet, and I hope the Lord will finde a way to his Highness for raising of money without giving offence to those that love not to live in troubled waters. A Gentleman who had served in forraigne wars, presented his service to his Highnesse to serve him in Flaunders, and of his owne accord told his Highness, that for killing a man in a quarrell three yeares agoe he fled out of England, for which he is sent to prison to be tryed, and now cries out of his belly for betraying himselfe. H. W.

1. 40      *March 2, 1655*.--The Lord Rich his corps (since there removall from Whitehall) are set up in great state at Warwick House. His Highness mourned three daies in purple (as is used by persons of his quality). The rest of the family is in close mourning for his Lordship. The Members of the late House of Lords are put in Commissions of the Peace under the title of Barrons, and this done by the consultation and advice of the Judges. Colonel Beaumont hath a patent under Seal for making him a Barron. The Members of the next Parliament are to be called according to the antient lawes of the nation and the Peticion and Advice, in that the Instrument of government is laid aside; its said that the writts for their call will be issued the next week, but no order is yet past the Conncell for that purpose, though much debate hath been had thereupon.<sup>1</sup> . . . G. M.

<sup>1</sup> Compare the newsletter of May 29. TH shows that the plan adopted in calling the Parliament of January 1659 had been long under discussion. The calling of a new Parliament was proposed almost at once after the dissolution of February 1658. See *Timblee*, VI, 820, 840. A letter of advice as to the calling of a new Parliament addressed to the Protector by some unknown person about this time, is given in *Timblee's paper*, *Revelation*, 958. A. ix, 771.

It is conceived to be the opinion of most of the good people of the nation of all



*Westminster, March 20, 1655.* — . . . Since the Lord Mayor and the Common Councill's address and declaration to his Highness (to oppose all his enemies and the nations, and faithfully to obey his government in the preservation of religion, the lawes, liberties, and peace of the people<sup>1</sup>), they have proceeded in the forming of their Militia, adding another regiment therunto. It is intrusted in the former commission as heads only some few added therunto.<sup>2</sup> The Hawks of the Tower are doing the like with their regiments, and each regiment of the traine here are recruiting to 1200 each, butt the supernumeraries conceived for the service of Sweden. A considerable fleet is likewise preparing, and will be out suddenly, soe that wee shall bee in a good condition of defence. . . .

G. M.

*March 25, 1655.*— Wednesday all the generall and field officers about the head quarters met together in Whitehall, where amongst others there were present the Lord Fleetwood, Lord Disbrow, Lieutenant Generall Whalley, Major Generall Goffie, Colonel Cowper, Colonel Bridger, Colonel Kelsey, Colonel Colbet, Colonel Sadler, and many others. My Lord Fleetwood made a short

judgments, as to the Legislative power. That there being soe much worke for it to doe as there is, and the body of a Parliament (after the old way) moveth soe slowlie (though unanimous), that now when it wilbe much divided (which cannot but be expected upon a promise of election) it wilbe impossible to be done by it.

'They seeme therefore much to desire a lesser Body, or Councell somewhat lyke to it, of moderate and possible men as none of one mynd as may be.

'But if it be by Parliament in the former way. It is conceived to be much to advantage to call it out of course, and possibly. And not to stay till the 30<sup>th</sup> yeare. 1. For then if not liked it may be dissolved at the end of 3 months. 2. It is conceived soe, it may be called to speecell purposes, and that then they are not to medle with any thinge els. 3. The elections now by the care of the Sheriffs and helpe of the Mayor generall wilbe looked to. 4. If any get in unfit, the councell may put him out by the w<sup>th</sup> of the Government.

'Undersd. Some considerations about a Parliament deliverd to the Lord Prot.<sup>3</sup>

<sup>1</sup> See *Memorials of Cromwell*, March 11-18, for Cromwell's speech to the City (on M<sup>o</sup> 11-19); it is copied in *Cromwell's Speeches*, p. 111. See also Thurloe, vii, 3.

<sup>2</sup> *Col. State Papers*, Dec. 10-57-58, p. 330.



speech to us, shewing how necessary a thing it was for the army to unite themselves, and such to the purpose of the inclosed addresse, and then produced the originall of which the inclosed is a copy, and having read it twice left it to every one to speake his thoughts to it, and as many as pleased to signe it. There was not a man made the least objection against it, but all as one man signed it. Colonel Sailer for the officers in Ireland declared that he knew they would be most willing to signe it, and Colonel Cobbett for Scotland declared what some regiments had already done, and that the rest would doe the like. All having signed, Major Swallow and myselfe were appointed to attend in the same place this day, to receive the subscriptions of all such officers as should come, and be willing to signe the same. Wee were no sooner dismissed but within one hower orders went forth for all the Colonells to attend his Highnesse this morning, who accordingly did, besides many other inferior officers. What the issue of that was, I shall this night I hope be informed, and give your Lordship an account thereof. This day forenoon Major Swallow and I gave our attendance, and there repaired to us so many officers who cheerefully signed the same as made up the number of officers who signed the same (together with those who signed yesterday) 224. I am by the officers informed that scarce an officer neare the head quarters were absent. Tomorrow in the forenoon the Captains and all other officers, none under the degree of Captain, are again to meet, and the addresse is to be delivered to his Highnesse, and all the officers to attend it. There has bin a generall search in all parts about this towne, which began at 12 howers in the night, as well in private as in other houses, for all such persons as staid in towne contrary to his Highnesse' proclamation, many were taken prisoners, but I heare not of any considerable person. Our forces at Mardike are in a good condition, and about 1000 in number; its beleived his Highnesse intends this Spring to send about 2000 more. Sir William Waller [and] Colonel Russell, brother to the Earle of Bedford, are sent to





the Tower, and just now I hear that the Earle of Cleaveland also is sent thither. I have such grounds that I beleive a Parliament is approaching.

H. W.<sup>1</sup>

*March 27, 1658.*—Munday last Sir William Waller[and] Majour Harlow (late Majour to Majour Generall Massey) were sent for to attend his Highnes, the former is discharged, the latter comitted to the Tower upon suspicion of treason. The new Lord Mayor and Alderman Breton that day received the honour of Knighthood. Weden-day night the citie and suburbs and 4 miles round were searcht for the Royall party; such as were found stand yet comitted, and none are discharged without order of the Councell. Thursday last patents were granted for making the Attorney Generall and Soliciter Generall Baronets. A declaration to be signed by all the officers of the army in England (to stand by and opose all the enemies of his Highnesse in the preservation of religion, rights and liberties, and peace of the nations) is agreed upon, and signed by most of the officers here present. The regiment of the Lord Richard Cromwell being to march are to be provided with back, breast, and pott, out of the stores. Two companies raised by Majour Jenkins and Captaine Harrison, for the defence of the garrison of Hartlepoole, are ordered to be putt into the Establishment.

Monday at 9 of the clocke the Councell are summonsd to attend about a businesse of high concernment which is not yet knowne to any.

G. M.

*April 3, 1658.*—The Privie Councill of his Highnesse, and another Councell of the army have been this weeke in debate of grent business of calling a Parliament (which it's thought will sitt in May next), and likewise of a more future and more absolute settlement, then the Petition and Advice doth hold forth.<sup>2</sup> His

<sup>1</sup> The name was probably written by Henry Walling. In *Mercatorius Politicus*, vol. 1, p. 23, 24, there is a list of names from the members of the army to Cromwell. Walling is the only one of the signatories whose initials are H. W.

<sup>2</sup> See Thurloe, vii. 38, 59, 133.



Highness, upon the receiving some late intelligence from Ostend, hath spent much tyme in a private debate with the Majour Generalls to the further security of the nations. 20<sup>r</sup> per diem is added to the pay of Lieutenant Generall Whalley, and as much to the pay of Majour Generall Goffe. Mr. Can and Cornet Day, continuing to preach scandalously against his Highness, are comitted to the Counter.<sup>1</sup> Mr. Peake stands comitted to the Tower for the like offence. Monday next the Councell of officers meets againe upon the great business; it's thought it will be perfected the next weeke. 2000<sup>l</sup> a peece is order'd to the 3 daughters of late Colonel White, and provision made for the wives and children of all those officers cast away with him. G. M.

*April 6, 1658.* The first instant about 10 att night Major Generall Morgan drew out 400 souldiers, and 50 horse, and 2 brasse guns, and marcht towards Gravelin, where they joined with 400 of Bourburgh forces, and fell upon two forts of the enemies; all the souldiers yielding themselves prisoners hee blew uppe the forts with powder: itt was considerable by reason that these fortifications were raised to secure the sluices, which are now most of them demolished. W. C.

- t. 79. *April 10, 1658.* This weeke itt was expected that the Councill of officers would have mett to consider of the great businesse, butt did nott. It's conceived that the late information of the enemies intentions to make an attempt to land forces here (whereupon the active persons of the Royall party are in most parts secured) hath been the maine obstruction, and the rather for that his Highnesse hath spent much time in private debate with the Major Generalls concerning the safety of the people against such intended invasions. In pursuance whereof his Highnesse hath published a proclamacion

<sup>1</sup> See *A Narrative of the Life of John Corne Wintworth*, &c. London, 1658. They were arrested April 1, 1658. Day had once been a cornet in Harrison's regiment of horse.



against horse races for 8 months from the 9<sup>th</sup> instant. The enimie nere Cravelin intended by a shiice to drowne the partes about Bourburgh, but General Morgan drew out 1200 men, and tooke the 2 werkes upon quarter for defence thereof. The Councell have ordered the arreares of Lieutenant Generall Brayne to be paid to his father. 2000<sup>l</sup> for the repaires of Carlisle. The Lord Howard's regiment to be made up 1000. The officers of Colonel Gibbon's foote regiment to receive equall pay with those of the standing army.

*April 20, 1658.*—I suppose you have had a better account of f. 82. the late plott, wherempon so many prisoners have been and are still secured, than I can give you, but I shall informe as I understand. Charles Stuart intending to land forces in England, plotted with his old and new sprung up Cavaliers, such as young Gentlemen lately come to their lands and estates, to procure what guarrisons they could to be betrayed into his handes at a fit opportunity. Hull and Portsmouth were tampered withall. Sir Henry Slingsby tampered for Hull to be betrayed, promising large summes of money; who for Portsmouth I cannot learne; when C[harles] Stuart should land his forces London was to be put into an uproare, and then in all parts in England the Cavaliers were to rise. In order to this severall commissions were sent by Charles Stuart to severall persons, and they intrusted with many blanke commissions, some of which commissions his Highnesse hath. One Dr. Hewet, Minister of Gregories by Pauls, (at whose house as is said the Lord Ormond, when he was lately in London, did obscure himselfe), was a principall agent, and is in safe custody. Young Stapley, sonne to Colonel Stapley of [Sussex], had severall commissions, which his Highnesse hath. The High Court of Justice is speedily to sit, who doubtlesse will make example of some of these. The Lord of Warwick is lately dead, and so also Sir Thomas Vyner Alderman of London, a very honest Gentleman, and good freind to his Highnesse and governement. The tolke of



a Parliament is not so much as formerly, but I am apt to beleive it is by reason of these new discovered plots. In all these things the Lord appears mightily for us and to owne his Highnesse.

H. W.

Licut.-Col. Hughes to General Monck

1. 86b *Mardyke, May 7, 1658. [Old] style.* - Marshall D'Amont had order sent him to Balloigne to shipp out of his quarters 1300 men, and to land att Mardyke, which hee did accordingly, and tooke the government uppon him, untill 3 citizens of Ostend brought him directions to re-ship his men, and an order to bee guided and directed by them in what they should imploy him, whereupon hee with the Intendent Talon very confidently shipp't themselves and souldiers for Ostend. The townsmen repairing to towne our returning aboard our ships with the town Major [*sic*] and assured them the towne should bee delivered into their hands. Some French and some English went ashore, and were kindly entertained (the Spaniards being gone out of the towne); and some enquiring who they were for, answer was made for the King of France, the townesmen replied they were alsoe for him, and advised them to bee ready to enter the towne when they should sett up a red flag and fire two peeeces of ordnances, which they performed on Tuesday last. Their gunnes being fired and our's replying, the Marshall with the Intendant, [and] most of the officers with the King's and Cardinall's Musquetiers, made towards the towne (where they mett with several pilotts to conduct them in, in a frigott of their owne with 4 gunns, and entered the towne, and assoone as they were in the watergates were shut, yet many were landed on the Key. Then the towne began to play their ordnance full of case shott at such as were on the Key, and destroyed most of them, and sunck two vessells that were come to the Harbour; the remainder seeing their freinds betray'd faced about, and came hither yesterday to the number of 700, the rest being all killed and taken. The Marshall and his Cavaliers after a small volley given, yielded themselves prisoners





where they are at present. It seems that the same signe that was for our coming in, was likewise for the Spanyards, who had a body of foot with 700 horse ready at the towne end. It's reported they brought Marshall D'Amant to the top of a mount to see his followers mis-acred. Our shipping lost all their boats, and above 100 seamen as is reported, and thus this great designe ended tragically, the French being so confident of the businesse that they had not as much as an hostage with them.<sup>1</sup> My Lord Lockhart landed here last night, and is to stay for some time. Wee have received above 2000 recruits, and dayly expect the coming downe of the army to the number of 20,000; our hopes are they will be for Dunkirk, our soldiers being very ready for that worke.

RICH: HUGHES.

### Secretary Thurloe to General Monck

May 12, 1658.—Wee have now received the confirmation and particulars of Marshall D'Amant's bo-sent at Ostend, (a copy whereof you will herewith receive).<sup>2</sup> It seems to bee a very strange mistake of the French, and which no great a souldier as hee could scarce fall into. The same persons who have cozen'd him offer'd the same designe to H[enry] H[ughes] 9 monthes since, butt 'twas rejected here as ridiculous, and this wee could have inform'd the French, if they had pleas'd to have communicated itt to us; butt they manag'd itt soe privately that none butt their enemies knew of their intentions as itt seems.

J. T.

<sup>1</sup> See *A Relation of the Defeating of Cardinal Mazarine's and Oliver Cromwell's Design to have taken Ostend on Foot here in the Year 1658*, written in the Spanish by a person of quality, and now translated, 12 mo. 1666. Also Bourcelly's *Cromwell et Mazarin*, 1886, pp. 122-135. Thurloe, vii, 113, 115.

<sup>2</sup> An account of the plot, or *Levee* (or bill of the late transaction att Ostend); For the words on the French side, the plott was (as they say) laid thus, they had need for them, I fear too in the Burgesmaster, &c. as in the print. See *Mercurius Politicus*, May 6 1658, p. 525. The above passage by Thurloe is not transcribed in the *Clarke MSS.*, with the exception of the first line or two.



## Lieut.-Col. Hughes to General Monk

L. 95b.

I have presumed in my last to give you an account of the tragedy at Ostend, and the hopes wee had of the besieging of Dunkirke, which was yesterday performed by Marshall Turenne, who came through Flanders unexpected with 11000 men, and gained the passe without opposition; and wee on this side drew out 6000 foote and 1200 horse, and forced our passage over two rivers, and joyned with him, soe that wee are now hard at woork to finish our line of circunvalacion. Tharab's van-guard fell into the Duke of Gloucester's and Ormonds' quarters at Mountcastle, and spoyled some 5 or six hundred Irish foote, their horse getting away. The King and Cardinall will bee at Marlick this night to see the busines vigorously followed. Mijour G. Morgan came here last night, and this day arrived a messenger with directions (as I heare) for my Lord Lockhart to command our forces for the present.<sup>1</sup>

R. H.

## Newsletters

*May 15, 1658.*—The humney of famous Dr. Channell<sup>2</sup> is much lamented by all that know him. The two capps of crimson and purple velvet, worne onely by princes, and now making up by order of the MP of the Wardrobe, make the people talke largely of Kingship. All the horse, great gunns, and force are just now drawne into the City; what the reason is we know not yet, but feare that blood will be spilt this night. G. M.

*May 18, 1658.*—The Militia of the City and all the forces of the army in or neere London were ordered to be in armes last Saturday, to prevent a rising from the Cavalier party intended to have been made that night, but about 40 of them were taken, and

<sup>1</sup> This letter is copied, but from the account of the opening of the siege of Dunkirk, now found in its position in the letter-book, was evidently written about May 15. See *ibid.* p. 115.

<sup>2</sup> Francis Chyenne, died 1665.



all diligence is used to discover and secure more of them for the safety of the people. Fryday next will be a generall rendezvous for the Militia of London. . . . Five hundred men of Coll. Salmon's regiment and 500 of Coll. Gibbon's to be transported to-morrow into Flanders, and to be received into the said regiments againe upon their returne.

G. M.

*May 25, 1658.*—The Judges of the Courts in Westminster who are also Commissioners in the High Court named, doe not sitt, they being of opinion that by the Act and meaning of it (as it is said) they conceive the prisoners ought to be tried by a jury, but those thirty who sitt there to-day are of another opinion.

J. R.

*May 29, 1659.*—The slow part newes is, that a Parliament will L. 97.  
bee of 100 English men, for by the Petition and Advice Irish and Scotts are out, till by an act they be againe restored, as some tell me; and when it doth come I doe not discern that good which is usually hoped for by a Parliament, whether it be that more is expected from them and sooner then the wisdome and gravitie of a Parliament will admitt of, or that they will be stille on their partes not to give monys till greivances be redressed first, and libertie and proprietie settled, to secure which England hath been watered in all corners with the blood of the people. If God intends good to us wisdom and moderation will be seene, otherwise another breach of Parliament will ensue, (and all breaches are deepe wounds), and confusion will follow.

J. R.

#### Lieut.-Col Hughes to General Monk

*June 2, 1658.*—Here hath hapned nothing of consequence L. 98b  
since our breaking of ground, only that the Kinge and Cardinall are removed to Cales, where the Lord Falconbridge is come as Extraordinary Ambassadors, accompanied by my Lord Howard and severall persons of quality. Our approaches goes on a pace; the English souldiers, behaving themselves very handsome, have gained



a generall applause from all the Grandoes of the army; the French horse who formerly hated us are become very loving and civill, and had rather engage with us then with their owne foote. The enimie hath made some six sallies, and were well oposed by the horse and our foote. In the last severall of the French foote quitt their trenches. Their are 5 companies of Colonel Salmones and live of Colonel Gibbons come over, and doe the duty of a regiment, Lieutenant Colonel Pepper commanding them. We have this night gained their stockadoes, and lodged ourselves at the point of their counterscarfe. We seldome come of our English approach without losse, 50 or 60 wounded and severall shaine every night. Colonel Clarke is shott, severall captains killed and wounded; our battrys of some 14 guns doe much annoy the towne. Our freinds in England have beene very careless of us; the 1000 tents ordered us by the Councell 5 weekes agoe are not yet come, which causes a great sickness amongst us, having not one peece of wood within six mile of us to hutt with; all our mortar peecces and shells have beene here this three weekes, but the fire master is still in England. Don John, Prince of Condi, Charles Stuart and his brothers, are within a league and a halfe of our campe with 16000 men (on Newport side), and intend to relieve the towne; but I trust they may be mistaken, our sea shores being well stockaded and chained, and our line indifferently mann'd, the array consisting of 25000 horse and foote, ten thousand being horse. The Count of Grand Pre is expected here this day with 3000 horse. The English and French approaches are this morning joyned by a line of communication. We send every night to our approach 14 companies, and keepe above a third of the line, having but 2000 horse to assist us, but they are the most carefull and vigilant men that ever I knew, and endure shott very well, defying all danger whatsoever, my Lord Lockhart is our Genrall. Its supposed that the enimie in the towne have 1200 foote and 100 horse, besides townesmen, who trouble us very much with their ordinance.

R. H.

League before Dunkirk





The last night I was in the approaches I had two Captains kill'd, my owne Ensigne and Serjant also, and two of my corporalls dangerously wounded.<sup>1</sup> Captain Coates of our regiment was this day shott, his Lieutenant and Ensigne two dayes agoe.<sup>2</sup>

### Newsletter

*June 5.*—Mr. Mordant had 19 voices for him, and as many f. 93. against him, and the Lord President's voice saved his life. Att their first sitting that day Doctor Huett's lady presented a petition, which all night uppon her knees shee had bin begging her husband to signe, the substance was that hee might have liberty to plead, butt itt was denied because their title and his style therein was nott according to expectation, and for that his contumely [he] was entred [as] having denyed to plead uppon 12 severall admonitions of the Court. Yesterday Doctor Huett petitioned his Highnesse for 20 dayes reprevie, and if in that time hee confest nott matter to meritt his life then to bee executed, butt is reprevied only for 2 dayes. A yonge whale about 50 foote longe was kill'd on Wednesday last neere Greenwich, many porpoises being seene to rise that day above bridge.<sup>3</sup> It is observed by many heere that a whale was taken in the same river a little before the breaking out of the last great plague. Sir Henry Slingsby is reprevied. The Lord Falconbridge is this day arrived from France. G. M.

### Colonel Drummond to General Monck

My Lord, —According to my owne engagement and my duty f. 104b. to your Lordshippe, I begin to acquitt my self of a parte of what lyeth on mee with an account of our affaires heere, that our line being ended, and our approaches advanced to the flosse, the enemy

<sup>1</sup> Cf. Thurloe, vii. 126, where Lockhart's letter should probably be dated May 23, o.s.

<sup>2</sup> Capt. William Coates of Sir Bruce Cochrane's; 'shot' means wounded, not killed.

<sup>3</sup> This was one of the portents supposed to refer to Cromwell's death. Compare Dryden's lines:

' But first the ocean as a tribute sent  
The giant prince of all her watery kind.



resolved to relieve of the sidge; and upon consideration of the weaknes of our lyne by reason of the sandy ground and of the vastnesse of it, it was thought most secure to give them battle, which was done yesterday being Friday the 3<sup>d</sup> of June.<sup>1</sup> Marshall de Turaine commanded our right wing, having some six thousand horse and two thousand foote of France; in the body and reserve wee had six or seven thousand French and Switzes foote, and a thousand horse placed in some intervalles. The left wing was commanded by my Lord Embassadour Lockhart, having some five thousand English foote and two thousand horse in his first and second lynes: however hee resolved to charge upon the head of his owne regiment, whose carriage was such as I know that neither French nor English Drumalls will let passe in silence, but without vanitie that regiment has done what I have never seene done before, for they charged and beate a Spanish regiment of a hill more steepe then any ascent of a breach that I have seene. Fenwick,<sup>2</sup> the Generall's Lieutenant Colonel, is wounded very dangerously; two captains kill'd; one Captain Johns<sup>3</sup> that commanded the horse at Jamaica wounded and taken prisoner by the enemy by engaging two ferre. Next Collonel Lilliston's had the hardest pull, where there are thirtie or forty kill'd; after that Collonel Alsop's. The other fowre regiments had noe losse almost at all. The Englishes have such reputacion in this army that nothing can bee more. The enemy was thus disposed. The Prince of Condee with five thousand horse was the left wing of the enemy against Marshall de Turaine, and commanded over him by Proutville and Colingie Lieutenant Generall. Against our bodie was two thousand horse and two thousand foote commanded by the Duke of Yorke, who was accompanied by his younger brother, and where amongst other there was a Scotch regiment cald Middleton's, commanded by Horrie, and the English commanded by Collonel Blake,

<sup>1</sup> Should be 1702.

<sup>2</sup> Lieut.-Col. Roger Fenwick died of his wound. *Thames*, vii. 156, 157, 215.

<sup>3</sup> Captain Henry Jones. *Thames*, vii. 156.



and one composed of English, Scotch, and Irish, commanded by Musgarie<sup>1</sup> (an Irish Lord which was as Lieutenant Colonel to the forsaide pretended Ducke), whereof the most part are in our hands except the forenamed persons, and who are all sent prisoners to France, except some few that have bin in our service before. Wee had for enemies upon our wing Don John of Austria with three thousand horse, and the Marques of Carracena with 5000 owld Spanish foote drawne out of the garisons. Our wing, being some two miles distant from the other, charged first, and soe fell in betwixt our right wing (or rather the enemies left wing) and the towne of Ferne that was their retireate, so that if the horse of our wing had persued soe vigorously as wee expected, the enemies left wing and the Prince had bin ours; but soe it was that most part of all their horse did e-scape, but the foot, who was but some five thousand, are all gone, whereof wee have about two thousand prisoner, but of officers of horse and foote wee have eight hundred. All those that are of the owld Spanish regiments of Flanders the King of France has taken them to put in prison in France; they would all willingly give their ransome, but the King has ordered his Comisaries that are heere to pay their ransoms to those that toke them, but hee will not part with them; and the reason is that the King of Spaine has not any Spanish now in Flanders that know the way of warre in Flanders now, [or] that have any reputacion of the country for making new levees, and that hee will hardley bee induced to trust the Nobillitie of the country with milietary commands. The Marques of Caraccene was once prisoner with us, but one of the French souldiers is gone with him after divers of our generall persons had spoke with him. Since that time at our retourne to the campe wee toke a fort called Port Lyon upon Mardieke side of the towne, where the Marques of Castlens,<sup>2</sup> Lieutenant Generall to the horse and foote, is shott throw the body, and is curing now with small hopes of life. The prisoners tell us that before the army of the enemy tooke their resolutions

<sup>1</sup> *Le Musgarie.*<sup>2</sup> *Castelnau.*



to endeavour the reliefe of Dunkirke, that they had a Councell of warre or state at Ipre, where there was Charles Stuart and his brothers, Don John, Conde, and Caracene, and two of Lords States of Holland who sate with them. They did expect that the States was to have been with them by sea, but that this they think will stumble them, and it is somewhat probable, in so much that H[is] H[ighness] sent my Lord Montague thither yesternight with a recruit of shippes. Wee expect now shortly to have the towne, but that the Governor is more [stubborn] now than ever, that he may gaine time to his Master to recruit his armie, which occasions likewise our diligence. Having been with Marshall Turenne just now from my Lord Ambassadors, hee told mee that the King and Cardinall was to be here againe shortly. My Lord, this is all at present from,

Your Lordship's most obliged and  
humble servant

JO: DRUMMOND.

Compt before  
Dunkirke, June 5<sup>th</sup>  
1658.

Major Generall Morgan behaved himself gallantly in this action, and when the Marshall Turenne's wing of 16000 were worsted by the enemy, came uppe [at] a trot faster then the French gallopp, and defeated the enemy.

#### Lieut-Col. Hughes to General Monck

*June 2<sup>nd</sup>, 1659.*--May itt please your Lordshippe,

Had I nott bin kept 48 houres in the trenches I would have yesterday given your Lordshipp an account of God's great mercyes to us on Fryday the 11 instant, which was the day of battell. Don John, Condi, Yorke, Gloster, with other Grandees, drew neer our line on Thursday night with some 18000 horse and foote, and Thurin sent to us for 3 battalions or halfe regiment, but before we were ready orders came for all our 7 regiments to march except





11 companies, which were to storme the counterscarfe (who have been repulsed). Our bodie being come to Thurin (which was 7 miles march) were ordered for the left winge of the armie, and horse appointed for our wings. In this posture we marcht halfe a mile where the Spanish army was drawne up in battle aray; the Spaniards themselves led by Don John were on the right winge, drawne on a great hill naturally fortified; the Scotts and English were next them; Flemish, Walloones, and French on the left. Our whole army mooving made a stand within halfe a musquet shot of them on another hill without any firing, where they were ordered not to stirr untill such tyme as the enimie had quitted the great steepe hill, but our men could not be kept in without ingageing, went into the valley without orders given (yea, contrary to orders), and on hands and knees krep't up the hill, and gave the enimies foote two good volleys, and with our pikes forced them to retreate. On which Don John with his horse gave the Generall's regiment and Colonel Lilling-ton's a violent charge, that they were forced to give ground a little confusedly, but soone rallied, and forced Don John to retreate with the losse of his foote and many of his horse; the French horse appointed for our wings standing still without giving the least as-istance till they saw the enimie rooted, having no st amack to fight. The Duke of Yorke[s] English, and Middleton's Scotch, [and] Ormond's Irish were soone beaten, the English only fighting; the Scotts and Irish, as our regiment and Colonel Alsop's were coming up to them, val'd their collours, and made shew of yeilding, but ours judging it a defiance as they had done before we mooved, gave fire at them, but it was very reall, for they had laid downe there armes, and cryed for quarter, and on our fireinge they struggled a litle, and were soone quelled, all beinge killed and taken: amongst whom it is reported my Lord Musgrave was slayne, and severall English Gentleman. Such as wee mett of our runawayes were knock't in the head,<sup>1</sup> and such as wee mett amongst the French wee forced from them, and intend

<sup>1</sup> Thurloe, vii. 170.



to doe justice on them. Martiall D' Hoquincourt is slayne, fower Lieutenant Generalls prisoners. All there foote beinge neere 5000 are killed and taken. York's horse was killed, and Charles is left without 20 men to invade England of his owne. Had Thurin's horse done anie service at all, the whole armie would have bene kill'd and taken, havinge three mile of good ground to persue them, the enemy beinge in a greate confusion, but the French horse would persue not one step further then our foote went. And thus through God's greate goodnes wee have beene instrumentall and the reall actors of gaineinge this easanble victory, which I trust wee shall make good use of. Had wee not ingaged the French would have bene soundly banged, and the towne relieved, which the Spaniards were confident of. And indeede the French have this 10 dayes left all the worke and hard attempts in a manner to us, whether it bee to breake and destroy us, or otherwise I know not, but wee are resolved to attempt all hazards and difficulties, and to bee there slaves untill this towne bee taken. Wee have six times stormed the counterscarps, and alwayes beaten of with greate losse of our officers and souldiers. Wee lost at the batle fower captains, four lieutenants, and not 50 men; one collonell, one majour wounded, with most of the officers. Wee have two captains, six lieutenants, twelve serjeants of our regiment wounded desperately in the batle and approaches. Little Captain Sherwin with his lieutenant and ensigne were slayne in the field. Wee have 500 recruits come this day, and within 12 howres we expect the remainder of Collonel Salmon's and Gibbon's regiments heere, beinge already shipt. Wee are to alarme the towne on all sides this night to divert there forces from our approaches. I beg your Lordships excuse for this broken attempt, and that the Lord of heaven may blesse and preserve your Lordship and family shall bee the earnest prayers of,

RICH: HUGHES.

From the Tower before Drakirk, 16 Jan., 31. Nov., 1655.

Our tents are just now come, and Mr. Kent for a firemaster.



## Lient.-Col. Hughes to General Monck

*June 14, 1658.*—About 12 att noone yesterday the King and Cardinall came to Mardyke, att which time a battery of this side and one mortar-peece began to play on the other side. Wee were wholly masters of the counter-earpe, and had drained the moate of the Grand Bastion, so that by this morning wee would have possed it, had they not prevented us by a treaty for rendition. There came out of towne a Gentleman with 2 attendants, who is with the King as hostage, and Thureine is to grant them what termes befits them, so that in few dayes this may become an English towne.<sup>1</sup> What the termes will be I shall advertise your Honour of when concluded. Colonel Drummond on Saturday night attempting (with some reformacion-) to possesse a traverse on this side the water, was dangerously wounded,<sup>2</sup> and so was most of his followers. The Spanish army are marcht towards Picardy to releive Rocroy which is besieged by La Ferte, and its judg'd this great body will attend their motion.

R. HUGHES.

From the Lagure 24 June  
1658. S. N.

The enimie are to march bag and baggage to St. Omer, and to carry 2 peices of cannon with them. The Marques de Leda, who was Governor, dyed 7 dayes agoe by reason of a shott hee received since this seige.

R. H.

## Newsletter

*June 24, 1658.*—The towne of Bergen and the fort of Bergen are now in the French hands by the blessing of God upon our armies, for it was the English that reduced them both to termes; and now whilst part of the French army under Marshall de la Ferte lyes before Rocroy, Marshall Thureine himselfe with Major

<sup>1</sup> See Thurloe, vii. 172; Bourcelly, pp. 229, 231.

<sup>2</sup> Drummond died of his wounds. Thurloe, vii. 174, 208, 216.



General Morgan are going to besiege Pearne.<sup>1</sup> I doe not yet heare that Mardyke is in our Lands, but I doubt not but it will, because I am informed it is within our capitulations. If the two before-mentioned places be obtained, the next designe is supposed to be upon St. Omers, which is a very strong place, and a great inlett into Flanders: it was vigorously attempted in the yeare 1638 by a great army French under the command of the old Marisshall Chatillion, but Piccolomini then relieved it. I hope your Lordshippe hath before this received the commission for the councell,<sup>2</sup> &c.

T. C[LARGES].

Major General Morgan to General Monk

*Dunkirk, July 27-Aug. 7.*—Marshall Laflert with his army hath closely besieged Gravelyn; tomorrow he intends to open his trenches, and to begin to carry on his approaches. Marshall Turcine with his army, and his Highnes' Regiments with mee in the field, lye still encamped nigh Newport, from which place Marques De Carascene and the titular Duke of York marched privately two daies since. Don John and the Prince of Condé have been laboring very hard to raise new forces to man their garrisons, intending to draw forth all their old foot to strengthen their army, which its credibly thought are now drawing to a head; whether to relieve Graveline, or to attaque Marshall Turcine's army is not yet known. Blessed be God our armyes are in a good condicion, and very cheerfull. At the late engagement with the enemy his Highnes' forces gayned much honour to themselves and countrey in the sight of many nations.

Tho: MORGAN.<sup>3</sup>

<sup>1</sup> Bergen, i.e. Bergues, capitulated July 1 (new style), and Furnes on July 3. Bourcelly, p. 245. See also Thurloe, vii. 191, 200. A newsletter amongst the *Clarke MSS.*, written in July, says: 'Lt.-Col. Hughes is dead of his wounds received at Bergen; he was killed 15 July.'

<sup>2</sup> See Thurloe, vii. 203.

<sup>3</sup> For other letters of Morgan's during this campaign, see Thurloe, vii. 200, 217, 223, 273.





## Extracts from Newsletters

*Aug. 11, 1658.*—Tuesday last the Lady Claypoole was brought from Hampton to Westminster, and there interred in Henry the 7<sup>th</sup>s chappell. H. H. hath bin lately visited with a fit of sicknesse, so that about three dayes agoe wee had some doubts of his recovery, the greatnesse of his distemper of the goute and other distempers, with the sorrow for the death of his daughter, having deepe impression upon him: butt now hee is pretty well recovered, and upon the consideration of his mortality will speedily resolve of something of settlement.

*Aug. 17, 1658.*—His Highnesse is well recovered of a great distemper too much like that in Cannegate.

*Aug. 28.*—Tuesday last his Highnesse returned from Hampton Court to Whitehall with a resolution speedily to nominate his successor, the temperate condition of his health ebbs and flows, his repose being obstructed with intervalls of restlesse paine. The Lord Richard Cromwell (tis said) is appointed Generalissimo of all the forces of the nations.

*Sept. 2.*—His Highnesse hath had a very good rest the last night and the night before, and a sore throat he had hath left him, and the sharpness of his fitts are abated, so that there is good hopes of his recovery, except some unexpected accident happen. His health was never more necessary then at this tyme that affaires are so unsettled.

T. C.

## Newsletters

*London, September 1, 1658.*—Pardon my trembling quill ready  
 to stoppe att the first line, as dreading to bee the unwelcome  
 messenger of soe fatall newes, butt that affectionate duty promptes  
 mee to mourne in the blackest characters: yesterday the 3<sup>d</sup> of  
 September Death overcame his Highnesse (who overcame thousands  
 upon that day of the month in the yeares 1650 and 1651), who  
 about three of the clock in the afternoone departed this life at



Whitehall. There was some concourse of people thither, butt nott many, nor noe tumults. The Councill mett, and open'd the writing the Lord Protector had sealed uppe, which did declare that the Lord Richard should succcede as Protector. Theruppon the Councill sent the Lord Fleetwood, Lieutenant Generall of the Army, to the Meeting of the Officers of the Army then assembled in Whitehall, who did declare unto them, That his Highnesse had in his lifetime nominated the Lord Richard to succcede him as Protector, and doubted nott butt that they, who had bore see much honour and respect to his late Highnesse who was a father to the Commonwealth, would now shew their esteeme of his Memory by giving an unanimous concurrence in the proclayming of the Lord Richard to succcede as Lord Protector; to which there seemed a generall consent, and then the Councill sent a certaine number of themselves last night about 8 of the clock unto the city of London to acquaint them as much, whose concurrence therein appeares by their proclayming of my Lord Richard this day. To us that are heere att this conjuncture of time and hearing the variety of discourses, thinges did looke very cloudily; Chillenden, Spencer, and other Anabaptists spake words very loude, butt that party wanted a head in the Army, soe that I doe nott discerne the least signe of disturbance. A great many of the longe parliament men flocked to Towne, which bred some jealousie, butt the prudentiall party att meetinges debated, and concluded that there was noe way to avoide the shedding of blond immediately butt forthwith to proclaime my Lord Richard, for itt would make our enemies stand amazed abroad to see such unity att home, itt would discountenance facions att home alsoe, and itt's hoped that the Lord Richard will call a parliament whose wisdome may settle thinges more firmly, soe att present all thinges are att quiett in the City, every man going abroad about his businesse without interruption. Guards of horse and foote went uppe and downe the streetes last night, butt mett with noe opposicion. The greatest feare I meete withall is least the Dutch breake out with a great fleet att this time upon hopes



of our distraccion, butt itt's conceived the setting uppe of my Lord Richard thus peaceable, and the Swede having full command of the Sound, will divert his purposes.

*Whitehall, Septemb<sup>r</sup> 6, 1658.*—Itt is a mercy worth all good men's observation to see all men thankfull in this change, except Mr. Feake and such as hee is [cypher], for hee did raile against the good choice which is published Lord Protector, and said if they had brought a Devill out of Whitehall in the shape of a man, they would have made publication for him. This hee said in the pulpitt. [cypher]. f. 156b.

### Secretary Thurloe to General Monck

The French have given a great defeat to the Spaniards neere f. 157b  
Ypres. The occasion was this.—The Prince of Ligne intended with 1000 horse and foot to relieve Ypres, which the French army had strengthened with an intention to lay a close siege thereto; before they putt in their relief the French fought them, and have killed and taken almost their whole body. Sir W<sup>m</sup> Lockhart with 250 horse went out to Newport, and brought away 100 cattell.

J. T.

Whitehall 9 Sept.

1658.

This engagement was upon the third of September.<sup>1</sup>

### Extracts from Newsletters

Itt will nott seeme strange if I tell you, that this last weeke f. 162.  
wee have every day bin fill'd with newes out of England;<sup>2</sup> As that the Lord Lanbert was in the head of 4 regiments of horse; That my Lord Fairfax had secured the Isle of Man for himselfe; That his Highness that now is was poysoned, and that the Lord Henry

<sup>1</sup> Alluded to in Marvell's lines on Cromwell's death:

'The last minute his victorious ghost

Gave chase to a French one, the Belgian coast'

<sup>2</sup> Undated, but apparently written in London September 17 from the Hague, whether Downing had just been sent as agent.



and yourselfe stood upon your tearmes. And this I thinke newse enough for one weeke, though I thinke if possible this next weeke will not be much behinde it; but notwithstanding all these vaine stories, it is easy to perceiue that there is an astonishment at hart in such as did expect greate changes upon his Highnesse' death to finde such an unanimity and cheerfulness in the declaring his Highnesse that now is, and indifferent by standers doe looke upon the enemies of England as now much farther from their ends then ever. . . .

G. D.

- f. 163. *September 18, 1658.*— . . . A generall meeting of all the officers heere was yesterday in the afternoone held att Whitehall, and an addresse unto his Highnesse being prepared the Lord Fleetwood acquainted them with the intent of their meeting, namely to consider of the addresse, which being read unto them they all unanimously consented and signed the same, and this day betweene 11 and 12 presented itt to his Highnesse, desiring that hee will bee pleased to owne and persist in that cause wherein the Lord hath bin pleased soe manifestly to prosper his late Father against the malice of all publique and private enemies, that turbulent spiritts may bee discountenanc't, and places of trust conferr'd onely on the faithfull Members of the Commonwealth, and the gouernement to bee settled in one single person and Houses of Parliament, wherunto with much candor, and undoubted reall affection to the gouernement of the Commonwealth and safety of the people, hee was pleased to give his gracious approbation. . . . The Lord Montague hath a regiment of horse given him, and tis said the Lord Fleetwood will suddainely bee appointed Generallissimo of all the forces.

G. M.

- f. 173. *Oct. 2, 1658.*— Thursday last Judge Windham and Judge Nicholas (Judges of the last Westerne cirenite), were questioned before the Councell for seditiously declaring in some of there charges that unlesse ministers would administer the Sacrament the





people were not bound to pay them tythes, which words tend to the subversion of one of the heads of the late Addresse to his Highnesse, whereupon they are both put out of commission.

*October 9, 1655.*—Some discontented Members of the army f. 175. prepared a petition (but subscribed by none) to present to his Highness, praying that the Lord Fleetwood may be appointed Genrall of all the forces of the 3 nations, and give commissions to all but feild officers, and that none may be admitted or cashiered the army but by a Court Martiall. Yesterday about 300 officers mett theirupon at Jameses. The Lord Fleetwood told them he had inaparted the petition to his Highness, whose answer was he would not part with the power of the militia out of his owne hands, or the priviledge of granting commissions, yet would willingly advise with him in any matter of concernment to the army, and to the rest he assented. After which the Lords Fleetwood, Desbrough, Whaley, and Goffier, told them the dangerous consequence of such petitions in this juncture of tyme, and advised them to unity of spirit in carrying on the good old Cause, wherein his Highness resolved to live and dye with them. Major Generall Berry then opened the good intention of the petition, so the meeting broke up, and they all parted very well satisfied. G. M.

*Oct. 16.*— . . . The commission for a Commander in Chiefe is fayrly engrost with a blanck left for the name. The petitioners for the Lord Fleetwood to be Generall of the forces of England and Scotland have apointed another meetinge Friday next at Jameses. . . .

*October 19, 1658.*—Yesterday morninge his Highness sent for f. 180. the generall officers of the Army, and had much conference with them, and they parted with kindnes,<sup>1</sup> soe that I hope all suspitions of disquiet in the army are laid aside. My Lord Fleetwood by advice of his Highnes Councell is made Leuit-Generall of the armys in England and Scotland. I think his commission is as it

<sup>1</sup> Cf. Thurloe, vii. 117, 152, and *caizot*, *Richard Cromwell*, i. 216.



formerly was and no otherwise, and the interposition of the Counsell's advice is according to the eighth article of the Petition and advice. T. C.

- f. 181. *Westminster, October 23, 1658.*—The Lord Lieutenant of Ireland's commission is sealed and sent over to him by his Secretary Doctor Petty. The office of marking of all white wollen clothes sent out of the nation, worth 1500<sup>li</sup> per annum, conferr'd upon the Lord Lambert, and the seale of the office upon the Lord Falconbridge, both which lately belong'd to the late Duke of Lenox. On Tuesday last the Lord Fleetwood att a meeting of the officers about London att Wallingford House advised them to unity, and to take speerill care to prevent disorders amongst their souldiers. Friday the officers mett att St. James's to secke God for a blessing upon the affaires of the nation, and a very eminent spirit of prayer appeared in the officers. 25000<sup>li</sup> order'd for the forces about London, and the guards about London to bee doubled. The losses of the English in the East Indies communicated to the Dutch Ambassadeur. The Council have had much debate about the Swed's businesse, butt are come to noe result. The siege att Copenhagen still continued. The Duke of Buckingham hath 14 dayes longer time to stay at Yorke House. Judge Margetts presented a petition to the Council that there might bee distinct Advocates for England and Scotland. G. M.

- f. 182. *Westminster, October 26, 1658.*—Yesterday his Highnesse and Council satt againe in private debate touching the Swedish affaires relating to the interest of this nation, the results of which debate (though att present suspended from a publique knowledge by reason of the treaty with the Dutch Ambassadeur) will suddenly appeare by the motion of Sir George Ayscue. The King of Sweden was lately forced to draw off from Copenhagen by reason of the great fall of raine, butt upon the abatement of the waters the siege was drawne closer then before, though with much hardship, the



souldours being forced in many places to stand uppe to the knees in water; and by a merchant arrived here last night from Holland 'tis said that the Dutch fleet lieth in the Sound ready to engage the Swedes, and that Copenhagen is surrendered.<sup>1</sup> Saturday last the Lord Pride dyed, whose death is heere much deplored.

G. M.

*November 6, 1658.*—Monday last his Highnesse had debate f. 185. with certaine feild officers about raising monies by the New-buildings &c. to pay parte of the souldier's arreares, and 6 sergeants are appointed to waite upon and assist the Receivour of the monies. The same day the High Court of Justice mett, but suspended their sitting till further empowered by new Commission. Captain Hart is appointed by advice of the Councell to be Major to the Lord Montague's regiment. The Councell have ordered a draught for an Establishment for Dunlirke to be prepared. The D[uke] of Bucks (being sick) to have 20 dayes longer liberty to stay at Yorke House. The funerall of his late Highnesse (intended to have been solemnized upon Tuesday next) is put off till further order.<sup>2</sup>

The officers met againe yesterday at James's, and about 3 f. 185b. howres prayed and expounded severall places of Scripture, and appointed to meet Friday next againe for the same purpose.<sup>3</sup> The Dutch Ambassadour is not yet gone, nor going, though Sir George Ascue tooke yesterday shipping for Denmarke. G. M.

*November 13, 1658.*—The corpes of his late Highness were on f. 187.

<sup>1</sup> *Public Intelligencer*, November 8-15, 1658. 'A relation of the Sea-fight between the Swedes and Dutch, as it was sent from Helsinger, 29th of October' (English Style). The Swedes are said to have lost two ships, the Dutch nine. Another account is given in *Memoirs of Oliver Cromwell*, December 9-16.

<sup>2</sup> A copy of the order of September 25, 1658: 'The Council sit next in consultation Monday the 1<sup>st</sup> of October for the funeral of His late Highness, the glorious champion who died bravely much after the manner of the late King James.' *ibid.*

<sup>3</sup> Guizot, *Richard Cromwell*, i. 248, 251.



Wednesday last removed from Somerset House, and passing through James's Park were carried to Westminster, and there interred in the vault in Henry 7 Chappell. The due preparations being now neer finished a day will suddenly be appointed for celebrating the funerall, the whole charge whereof will amount to above 28000<sup>li</sup>. Many of the Malignant party being flockt to town the force are appointed on that day to be dispersed upon severall guards in and about London, for the safety thereof; all the foot soldiers are to be accoutred in new redd coates trim'd with black which is given them by his Highness, which makes them not a litle joyfull in his favour, and though the Captains and other inferiour officers have no mourning given them, yet his Highness hath promised that which shall be of equall value thereunto. . . .

Yesterday the officers mett againe at James', spent 3 houres praying, expounding, and speaking. It was moved in regard the language flew high, and tended as some said to division, that the meeting might be dissolved, yet otherwise order'd. . . . G. M.

### Speech of the Protector, Richard Cromwell, November 19, 1658

Friday November 19, 1658, his Highnesse appointed all the officers of the army about the towne to attend him at Whitehall, to whom he made a speech to this purpose.<sup>1</sup>

1.11.60 'That hee desired a meeting with them to uphold the good correspondency that ought to bee betwixt him and the army, besides that hee was glal to see their faces, and now that hee had shewed them the way thither, he hoped they would more frequently make it their place of meeting, and all the roomes hee had, even to his bed-chamber, should be open to them (probably meaning thereby that there had been private meetings in other places, as

<sup>1</sup> See *Tristram*, vii. 147, 452, for an earlier speech of Richard's to the officers on October 18, and for a different version of this one; see *Moravicus Politicus*, November 18, 25; cf. Guizot, *Richard Cromwell*, i. 204.





indeed there had been, which was not so pleasing and acceptable unto him). Hee further told them, that by the providence of God the government of these nations was cast upon him, both as to the civill and military power, and that hee had accordingly been proclaimed and owned by the officers of the army, and since taken an oath to governe according to the Petition and Advice, which hee was resolved to pursue, and as they had consented in the proclaiming of him Protector, so hoped they would assist him in the government, for hee stood in much need of their advice, being young and not fitted for so great a worke, and had a disadvantage, that hee succeeded one who was so extraordinarily able to undergoe so great a burthen, which would sirke him, if hee had not the advice and alsoe the prayers of good men. Hee alsoe told them that it would be very necessary all jealousies and misconstructions were layd aside, and that every one would bend their mindes to love and charity, and to believe that hee would be as carefull to protect the golly of the nation, as others who apprehend a safe protection for them might be better elsewhere, and that it was a great discouragement unto him when some from whom he expected better things should have those jealousies of him, as to that and other particulars hee hoped hee did not deserve it, and did wish that they would be eyewitnesses of his actions.

The occasion wherefore (as I apprehend) the Lord Protector made this speech to the officers, was because that this day they were to meet at St. James', as they had done for severall Trydaies before, where they had severall conferences upon places of Scripture, but medled not with the affaires civill or military till this day sonight that they began to breake out, and to hint at some alteraciens made in the army, as if good men were put out, and worse put in; which speech Major General Goffe did oppose, and laboured to convince them of their error, and the meeting this day at Whitelhall prevented that meeting. The officers seemed to be much affected with what my Lord said, except some few of the inferiour sort who mattered a little after they were gone, but they were persons



inconsiderable, so that in all probability things will tend to unity in the army, and then my Lord Protector will have encouragement to protect lawes, liberty, property, magistrates and ministers, order and government, which hee is resolved to doe against all arbitrary wayes that shall be proposed to the contrary.<sup>1</sup>

Mr. Downing to General Monck

Hague, 26 Nov. 1658.  
6 Dec.

Right Honorable,

- f. 128. It is nott to bee imagined what an outcry is heere upon the French Ambassadour and my giving in each of us a Memoriall to the States Generall, declaring his Highnesse and the King of France his intention to endeavour a peace in a separate way betwene the Kings of Sweden and Denmark without intermeddling other interests and matters therewith; they say they must not mind what France and England say, but follow their owne busines and interest, and that they shall never bee well till they have a little brought downe the courage of the English; yett it was not beleaved that his Highness would send a fleet to the Sound this Winter, untill that this dayes past brought newes of it's being gone, a[nd] I need not tell you that this gives a great alarme. The 1000 men which are to goe for the Sound sett sayle upon Tuesday last from Amsterdam to the Texell, whither also De Ruytler is gone with sea men for 4 men of warr with the which hee was to convoy them, and to morrow the[y] were to sett sayle; whether the newes come this day by the post of his Highnes' fleete being gone that way may put them to

<sup>1</sup> A newsletter from G. M., November 26, gives another and briefer account of the speech, adding that the officers 'seemed not a little satisfied at their departure.' They were to meet again the following Friday, and a letter of November 27 says: 'Ye tuesday the officers were again at Jamne to pray as formerly.' In a postscript it adds: 'A petition was carryed on by the troopers for the addition of 2<sup>d</sup> per diem to their pay, but it is suppress'd, and the promoters under examination.' A letter of December 18 says: 'We tuesday last two troopers of the Lord Fleetwood's regiment were carried by a Court Marshall for carrying a petition to promote a petition for arrears and increase of pay.'



new counsellors, time must shew. It hath frozen hard this 3 or 4 dayes, and snowed alow; [so] that people are already running upon the ice upon their scuttles, and they begin to talke of the Sound freezing upp. I had ye[ste]rday a letter from Zealand of the 2<sup>d</sup> instant, which saith that a Master of a vessell arrived there reports that hee had mett an English fleet of men of warr some dayes before upon the Dogg sands in the North Sea, yett men would not beleeve him, for that it was positively writte from London, that that fleet was to goe to the coast of Spaine, and the last letters from St. Sebastian say that the Spanish plate fleet is already past the Havana. Thorine hath bin stormed by the Poles and the Imperialists, but they were repulsed by the besidged with greate loss; the King of Sweden hath raised the siege from before Copenhagen, and the Danes are demolishing the works that they had made, and the King is now at Landshroonen with his fleet.

G. D.

### Newsletter

*December 25, 1658.*—The Dutchy Chamber and Court is t. 201. assigned to keepe the records of the House of Commons. The regiments of foote in England are reduced to 750 in each regiment, 500 of which reduced are sent to Flanders, and Collonel Gibbon's and Collonel Salmon's men to returne. The Establishments for the garisons in Flanders is passed. Majour James Russell is constituted Governour of Nevis. A Committee to consider by what authority the Opera in Drury Lane is shewne, and what the nature of it is. 160<sup>li</sup> per annum for life is settled upon Collonel Mackworth his widow. James House is ordered to be made ready for hir Highenes Dowager, and the garison to be removed to Berkshire House. Major Generall Harison is already chosen a Member. The Maior of Readinge with the Towne Clarke so much displeased the townsmen on Tuesday last in proposinge 2 gentlemen to be chosen for that place, that they immediatly tooke a way the mace from the Mayor and clerke, and called an other Maior and Towne Clarke.<sup>1</sup>

G. M.

<sup>1</sup> *Cl. Merchant's Relations*, December 23-26, 1658, p. 118.



## Secretary Thurloe to General Monck

- l. 201b. *December 25, 1658.* Vice-Admirall Goodson wrote to mee the last night, dating his lettre some leagues from the Scaw, that hee found soe much ice there that hee durst nott venture with the fleet into the Sound, that therefore itt was resolved there att a Councill of warre to retorne back for the coast of England.<sup>1</sup> However the sending of the fleet thus farre hath nott bin without effect, for itt hath had such influence upon the Dutch that itt hath hindred them from sending their new supplies of 1000 boate and 12 shippes of warre.

J. T[HURLOE].

Westminster, 25 December

1658.

elin Christmas Day.

Newsletters 1659<sup>2</sup>

- xxxi. l. 3. *Westminster, January 1, 1658.*—Upon complaint of the Dutch Ambassadour itt's referred to a Committee to finde out the authors of the booke intituled, 'The Dutch Characteriz'd' and 'Mercurius Anglicus.' Some verses are lately printed reflecting upon the person and government of his late Highnesse, and a booke intituled, 'Breif Directions how itt a popular Government may bee made'; both likewise referred. Some of the 20 sayle as lately came home and are nott defective ordered to remayne in the Downes, and the rest to come into harbour.

G. M.

Major Harlowe is supposed to bee the authour of the verses before mentioned.

- l. 6b. *Westminster, January 6, 1658.*—My Lord Fairfax is chosen Knight of the Shire for Yorkeshire and Captain Harrison. Major Generall Harrison is chosen as is reported for Stone in Staffordshire. Colonel Rich stand. for Southwarke.

H. W.

<sup>1</sup> Cf. *Thurloe Papers*, vii. 581.

<sup>2</sup> The papers for the year 1659 come from vol. xxxi. of the *Clarke Papers*.





*January 8, 1655.*—The election of Yorkshire lay between the Lord Fairfax and Mr. Harri-son when the last post came thence, and how it is decided wee yet heare not. Mr. Morden (safely tryed by the High Court of Justice) is likewise said to be chosen. Though severall of the eminent Commonwealths men are gott in upon this election, yet they are conceived to be of no greater advantage then any other, because that in all the debates for or against King-shipp there was not one proselite or one disciple gained by what was argued by the wisest of men on both sides. The great bissines of the Councell this week hath been to prepare an estimate of the charge of his Highness, and how far it hath exceeded publick receipts, and abated or taken out of the 399,000<sup>li</sup> per annum allowed for maintinance of his Highnes' household expences for satisfaction of the Parliament. Thursday last upon invitacion from his Highness all the officers of the army (not under the degree of a Captain) received a royall treatment at Whitehall.

*Westminster, Jan. 11, 1655.*—This day heere was chosen for parliament men, Alderman Thomp-son, Mr. Biddufe also a marchant, and Capt. Jones, onely these 3; others were in nomination, but they could not agree of any more: the dispute is now between Alderman Robinson and Major Generall Browne for the fourth man.

*Jan. 11, 1655.*—Capt. Stokes, commander of the fleet in the Streights, sent Capt. Whetstone, nephew to his late Highness, a prisoner from the fleet for disobeying orders, or some other reasons which I know nott of, and there is a Commission issued for a Court Martiall, wherof all the Commissioners of the Admiralty are to bee, and many other officers and other persons, and the quorum not to bee lesse then 11. There is also one Capt. Sanders of the fleet to bee tryed by the same Court, but his coming I have not yet heard of. My Lord Fleetwood and my Lord Disbrowe are in joynt commission made Lord Wardens of the Cinque Ports and Constables of Dover. . . . My Lord Whitelock is to be this day made one of the Commissioners of the Great



Seale, which some say is in order to his being Speaker of the Lords House.

T. C.

*Jan. 13, 1658.*—This day the elections have been at Braintree for knights of the shire for Middlesex, where Mr. Gerrard, the eldest sonne of Sir Gilbert Gerrard, is chosen for one; yett though it bee now 7 of the clock in the afternoone the choice is nott yett determined for the other, but stands betwixt Sir James Harrington, Mr. Chute, and Mr. Berners, and itt's thought the first of the 3 will carry it.

T. C.

- f. 11. *January 21, 1658.*—On Wednesday last Colonel Clarke of London, Mr. Recorder Shafto, Mr. Blaxton, and Captaine Lilburn [were] in nomination as Burgesss; from 8 in the morning to 7 at night was their election, and after many high words and discontents on each party they came to the pole, and it was carryed for Mr. Shafto and Captain Lilburne with abundance of respect from the commons in Town, notwithstanding of severall people, especially the 2 persons I nominated in my last to your Lordship, who had put their prosolites abroad to hinder Captaine Lilburne.<sup>1</sup>

The vote :

Recorder Shafto	.	.	.	.	449	} 1239
Captain Lilburne	.	.	.	.	341	
Mr. Blaxton	.	.	.	.	269	
Colonel Clarke	.	.	.	.	180	

#### Mr. Downing to General Monck

- f. 15b. *Hague, January 2 $\frac{1}{4}$ , 1658.*—The States of Holland are separated with a resolution to returne againe about Thursday next; in the meane tyme the sea equiphage goes one a pace, and at their returne they will come fully authorized with power to conclude about the number of ships to be fitted out, according to the advice

<sup>1</sup> This refers to the Netherland election, and is evidently addressed to Monck by some officer there.



of the Colledges of the Admiraltie hinted in my last, as alke to consent to the raising of the 200 penny of all men's estate; and such other extraordinary taxes as the Admiralties have advised to, that soe they may not be foyled for want of monys in the carrying on of this busines of the Sound, which they of Amsterdam say plainely they will [go] through with, although it cost them the half of their estates; and its strange to see with what readyness this people doe consent to extraordinary taxes, although their ordinary taxes be yett as great as they were duringe the warr with Spaine, and indeed such as would make any man admire at, a barrell of ordinary beere payeing 10 stivers excise, and 5 stivers for bringing in, each stiver beinge more then an English penny, and every man payes the 6 penny of the rack rent of his lands besides an infinity of other taxes, soe that I have reckoned that a man cannot eate a dish of meat in an ordinary but that one way or another he shall pay 19 excises out of it. This is not more strange then true. Men doe not heere beleieve that you will be able to possess any English Parliament soe farr as to be willinge to contribute in a fair lesser degree to the mainteyninge of your interest in the Sound or elee where abroad, and if not, this people know that in the conclusion they must be your maisters in poynt of trade and interest abroad. Beside the plaine truth is your booke of rates for the customes is as an unpassible barr against trade, and let what elee in the world wilbe or can be done, as long as that stands as its now its a vanity for you to hope for trade, but this are subjects too large for a letter. Its heere resolved againe to send 1000 men to the Sound, and heere is yet neither frost nor snow, so that men say the English flecte lost a brave opportunity. I received one from your Lordship by the last post save one, and shall onely say that there is noe man alive whome you shall fynd upon any occasion more truly my Lord,

Your Lordship['] most affectionate  
humble servant,

G. D.



## Newsletter

f. 16b. *Westminster, July 27.*—This day the Parliament mett, and my Lord Protector went to the sermon in the Abbey in Westminster, to whome as alsoe to both Houses Doct<sup>r</sup> Thomas Goodwin did preach, who exhorted his auditors that mercy and truth might meeete together, that Christian liberty might be preserved without unchristian licentiousnesse, that magistracy and ministry may bee maintained; and after [the] sermon my Lord Protector came to the House of Lords, and spake to both Houses with such a grace and presence, and with such oratory and steadinesse, without the least interruption and soe pertinently to the present occasion, as itt was beyond all expectation.<sup>1</sup>

You sent mee a list who are chosen in Scotland; I am afraid I shall send you word that their elections will bee all questioned, for att this dayes meeting where 310 were sworne in the House of Commons I finde an indisposition towards them, and that to morrow they will bee putt hard to itt to make them incapable of sitting. Itt is a Commonwealthes interest doth oppose them.

There will bee two to one for confirming of the present settlement by a Protector and two Houses against a standing Commonwealth Councill (for standing pooles doe corrupt), yett as to the qualification of the other House, and whether the wordes of the Act<sup>2</sup> warrant the Scotts Members sitting, will take debate; I beelve there will bee a considerable party for Scotts Members to sitt, butt nott for the Irish.

J. R.

<sup>1</sup> He 'delivered himself in a compendious speech for above a quarter of an hour' says another letter of the same date. A third adds that 'it was very taking, and much approved of by most of the members, which they signified by their general hummings of him whilst hee was speaking.'

<sup>2</sup> The Petition and Advice.





George Downing to Secretary Trimloe<sup>1</sup>

*Hague, Jan. 28*  
*Feb. 7. 1659.*

By a lettre lately from Admirall Opdam wee understand that f. 20b.  
 the King of Denmarke was sending some shippes to the Island of  
 Borneholme, which they had lately surprised from the Swede, for  
 provisions of butter and other such necessaries as that place could  
 afford, for the supply of Copenhagen, where they had had some  
 few dayes before a great alarme by the Swedes drawing together  
 upon a Sunday while they were all at Church, so that ministers  
 and people ran all out of the churches to the walls. The States  
 of Holland have resolved that 18 sayle of great men of warre be  
 forthwith equipped, over and above the 35 sayle which are already  
 in the Sound under the command of Admirall Opdam, and this  
 not to hinder what further resolution they may thinke meet to  
 take in order to a further equippage in further pursuance of the  
 advice of the respective Admiralties, and they worke Sabbath daies  
 and working dayes all alike at Amsterdam for the hastning of  
 this equippage. I hope God will give you such spirit as to con-  
 sider how much you are interested in these concernements abroad,  
 and not to spend your time about vaine questions and janglings  
 which profit not, to the neglect of your reall concernements and the  
 necessities of the people, who languish for many good and whole-  
 some lawes, and to the making yourselves ridiculous and a scorne  
 to all people abroad. I must tell you that I know not any thing  
 so much talked of at this time as the Parliament at London, and  
 it's judged twenty to one odds that the issue of it will be nothing  
 but janglings about questions in the ayre, and that by that meanes  
 you will not be in a readynesse with the time of the yeare for  
 affaires abroad, and it's not to say what moneyes were sufficient  
 for England in former times, for then England's revenue though

<sup>1</sup> The letter is unaddressed, but from the advice about Parliament contained in it it is probably a copy of a letter written to Trimloe.



small, yet held proportion with the revenues of neighbouring Princes and States about them, and that must be the rule now, or England is undone. If this countrey keepe up their taxes to the height, yea encrease them, and England do not the like, must it not necessarily follow that all men must apply to this countrey, and England be wholly neglected and forgotten? But the playne truth is, if you will be able to pay taxes you must lower your customes very greatly, and raise it by way of excise; for my owne part I am clearely of opinion that you ought to take away the halfe of the customes, yea in some things, as particularly all woollen manufactures, to bring downe the cloth from 6<sup>s</sup> 8<sup>d</sup> custome to 8<sup>d</sup> or 1<sup>d</sup>, as it is in this countrey, and in other things you ought to take away all the custome, as upon Spanish wools and other wools imported, and England shal never, and can never flourish, until this be done. And for wines they ought not to pay above 10<sup>s</sup> per tun custome, whereby you may be in a condition to make England as well as this countrey a magazine for wines. All other projects for advancing of trade without this are to little purpose. Beside some law ought to be made impowering his Highnesse and Councell to give orders for the compelling of ships, as they shall see cause, to stay for and be subject to their convoyes, as it is in this countrey. That foolish fancy of getting first to the market makes so many never come thither. Many other things I would hint, but they would be too large for a letter. The other night a rabble of people of about two or three hundred, upon pretence of a difference (which yet indeed was none) between the Envoy extraordinary of Poland, and some of his footmen, came about his house in a violent outrageous manner, reviling him, breaking the windowes with stones, and endeavouring forcibly to enter at the windowes and doores, so that he was in danger of his life: and the next day officers came with an order from one of the Courts here upon a pretended false ground to seize all his goods: of which actions here are constructions made which I shall not hint, but this is certaine that many here doe not well relish his being to goe for England.



Yesterday morning I signed an accord with the Deputies of the States Generall, whereby this State is obliged to make full satisfaction for 3 English ships taken in the roade of Bantam in the East Indies by the Dutch East-Indy-Company; they are to pay for the ships and goods as they would have bin worth at London, in case they had not bin hindered in their voyage, together with interest, and the money is all to be payd at London.

G. D.

### Extracts from Newsletters

*Feb. 1, 1658.*—The bill for recognition hath bin read twice in the Lords House, and once in the House of Commons. Mr. Scott, and Sir Arthur Hesterigge, and some others, spoke against the admitting of Scotch and Irish members, and something in a Commonwealth's way, but nott much taken notice of. G. M.

*Feb. 3, 1658.*—Though this parliament consists as may seeme of various judgements, yett I am very hopefull they shall be found of sober spiritts, and that they will make itt their worke to fix and settle the present government, and nott att all shake or weaken itt, whereby the spiritts of these nations will bee much quieted, and the enemies of peace much disappointed. J. M.

*Feb. 5, 1658.*— This daye the Lord Fairfax, Lient Generall Ludlowe, Mr Godfrey, Mr St Nicholas, and Sir Anthony Ashley Cooper, came into the House; some of them scrupled the oath taken by the members; some dispute whether they should be admitted to sitt without taking itt, but the debate waived.

G. M.

### Newsletters

*February 3, 1658.*—By lettres from Flanders itt is informed, f. 23. that it was the Lord Lockhart's pleasure to command five companies of Colonel Lillington's regiment from their Winter quarters at Amiens in order to the strengthening of Dunkirke, [cypher] which was obeyed, and Majour Mallory of the said regiment



marched with 5 companies, and tooke shipping in 2 vessels from St. Valerius, but the said vessells by reason of a tempest were separated, and the one vessell got safe to Dunkirke, but the other, wherein was the Major [and] divers officers with 2 companies and a halfe, had been missed 7 dayes when my lettres were dated, which causeth great doubts that they are shipwreckt, for which I am heartily sorry.

G. M.<sup>1</sup>

f. 25. *February 8, 1658.*—As to Parliament newes, there is nothing yett done more then debates. A petition is intended to be presented to the House of Commons upon tomorrow; there are about 12 persons, men of considerable quality who are to deliver it, they were at Westminster Hall this day to have delivered it; a freind who read the petition told mee the contents thereof was in effect as followeth. It is directed to the Parliament of the Commonwealth of England, and the petitioners call themselves 'the severall inhabitants in and about the City of London.' The preamble of the petition sets forth what God by his providence hath done in conquering their enemies, and restoring the people to their rights and privileges, and that now the Parliament being called it was onely in their power to establish them; the matter and aime of the petition in substance is that the present Government be overturned, and that the sole Government be in Parliament. A Commonwealth's Government that is a perpetuall Parliament. There is a postscript to it declaring the people's rights to petition Parliament, and that in the former Parliament they were threatned to be harmed in their bodies, that their petition was called mutinous, and that severall subscribers had for subscribing been turned out of their places, as Major Packer and others, something more to this effect there is.<sup>2</sup> I had it this day

<sup>1</sup> MS. 'T. M.'

<sup>2</sup> A second newsletter adds that the petition is the same upon the matter 'if not the very words, that should have bin presented to the last Parliament, and which as suppose was the occasion of Mr. John Pym's signature dissolving the Parliament. The House are not possess of it, and is like will not be till this debate be over.'





from a merchant, that the Hollanders besides their great preparation for shipping have ordered that no manner of munition or accommodacion for shipping be suffered to go out of their country. Major Audley is at liberty. H. W.

*Westminster, February 10, 1658.*—The House of Commons, f. 26b. after 4 dayes debate and many harangues of some able men, hath come noe further length then by a vote to state the question, that they will have a previous vote aient declaring his Highnesse to bee Lord Protector before their committing of the bill, butt whether that declaration shall have this addition (with such limitations as the Parliament shall appoint) or nott, is to bee debated to morrow; and that is observed of the old Parliament men's speeches, severall arguments ha bin insisted on against the other House of Lords, especially this, that they have nott the same naturall interest in making of lawes that the old Lords had, because they had nott soe large a propriety of estates.

In the other House they are uppon amending the acts against swearing, drunkennesse, and profanation of the Lord's Day.

H. L.

*February 15, 1658.*—Yesterday night about 10 of the clock f. 30. the Parliament passed 2 votes; The first was, That this House doth recognize his Highnesse to bee Lord Protector and Cheif Magistrate of this Commonwealth; The 2<sup>d</sup> was, That they doe likewise resolve to debate and assert the rights and liberties of the people in the same bill, of which the former vote is to bee a part; and that nothing of the former vote is to bee bindinge till the whole bill bee compleated made uppe of the later vote, as well as the former. In the forenoone a vote was pass'd whether the worde recognize should bee parte of the question, and itt was carried by about 13 or 20 voices in the affirmative. These 3 votes are the issue of 8 dayes debate uppon the bill brought in by Mr. Secretary for recognizing his Highnesse by both Houses of Parliament. There



is yett nothing said to the Lord's House. Tomorrow the first thing debated is to bee the rights and liberties of the people, and nothing to intervene, according to the last vote the last night; and what this question or debate will bring forth, or what the House meanes by itt, I am nott able to determine, butt many suppose the Militia are<sup>1</sup> a barre to the negative voice. Those they call the Commonwealth party are numerous in the House. I pray God to dispose their hearts to sobriety and moderation, the nations longs after a settlement which I hope in some time may now bee effected. This day Mr. Moyer and divers other gentlemen brought in a petition much in favour of common right and justice, and against tyranny, and such like expressions, and officers being turn'd out civill and mortall att discretion. The House read the petition, and returned answer, they had and would take the matters therein,<sup>2</sup> as they should thinke meete, into their consideration. My Lord Fairfax sits in the House. E. S.

f. 30b.

f. 31b.

*February 15, 1658.*—The 11 instant a Committee of officers were appointed to draw uppe some heads to bee framed into a petition, and presented to the Parliament in the name of the army. His Highnesse was lately with the officers att the Lord Fleetwood's, and admonished them to bee prudent and carefull in the draught of this intended petition, which (itt's hop't) will bee carefully observ'd. G. M.

f. 32b.

*London, February 17, 1658.*—Some of the officers of the army have had some meetinges att my Lord Fleetwood's about a remonstrance or p'tition, butt did nothing butt debate thinges, and seemed resolved to acquiesce in the Parliament determinations; however they did chuse a committee to consider of something, in case itt might bee seasonable to offer any thinge to the Parliament; vizte: Lord Fleetwood, Lord Disbrowe, Lord Whalley, Lord

<sup>1</sup> MS. read.<sup>2</sup> Cf. Guizot, *Re. Lord Cromwell*, i. 502.



Berry, Major General Lilburne, Colonel Ashfield, Lieutenant Colonel Mosse, Major Ellison, Captain Deane, and some others.

G. M.<sup>1</sup>

*Westminster, W'cc'ry 25, 1658.* Last night the Parliament sate till betwene 11 and 12 at night before they came to a vote (after 3 dayes debate), of referring it to his Highnesse to prepare and put forth the fleet to sea for the defence of the Commonwealth and securing of commerce and trade. That which hath been the occasion of the great contest was, that some (and that the greater part) are of opinion to have the government of the nation in a single person well limited and bound, and two Houses of Parliament, others are for an absolute Commonwealth within the walls of the House of Commons, exclusive to all others; by degrees one step will follow another, till (I hope) they doe come to a right understanding.<sup>2</sup> It is a shame that wee should sitt still at home with our hands in our pocketts, and to let the Dutch goe with so great a fleete into the Sound, and so probably have it delivered up by the Dane unto them, and wee sit still at home, and not to come and interpose by way of mediation to keepe the ballance equall betwene those two Princes, the Dane and the Swede, that the Dutch may not take it from them both, and give a law to us as to our navigation, the wooden walls of the nation.<sup>3</sup> I hope the

<sup>1</sup> MS. 'G. N.'

<sup>2</sup> A letter dated March 1 adds: 'Yesterday the House was in debate of the House of Lords, whether it should consist of the old, present, or mixed peerage.' The debates are reported at length in Barton's *Diary*.

<sup>3</sup> Downing writes from the Hague, Feb. 21, 1658: 'This last weeke wee have bin filled with reports that my Lord Protector was putt in the Tower by the parliament, and that the Lord Fairfax was to be Generall, the Lord Lambert, Lieutenant General and Major General Hammond, Major General of the Army, and that now there was noe danger of England being troublesome this yeare in the Sound or elsewhere.'



House of Commons will get a further steppe to give them instructions for their deportment at such a time, but as yet things passe with much difficulty, and the other House is not yet owned by the Commons, nor of what composition it shall be made (if the now standing be not allowed.) These are great and waighy matters: long debate and strong reasons will discover the conveniences or inconveniencies, and I hope produce good and able resolutions.

J. R.

f. 49b. [March 12?].—Major Generall Overtons coming to Towne was after an unusuall manner for prisoners especially, I remember the like was when Dr. Bestwick Prime and Burton were brought to London, they came after the same, and possibly fared the worse for it. The manner of it was that when hee came to Brinford about 1500 people were there waiting his coming, and betweene that and Westminster many others, some in coaches, some on horseback, some of them with their wives, and others on foote. The Collonel was in a coach with the Captain of the Castle from whence hee came, with one servant for his guard. The Collonel sat in the boote of a coach, and all the way as he passed by to the people and there upon the roade he kept of his hatt, and bowed to them. He was appointed by his Highnes to bee conveyed to Lambeth, there to bee in readines to attend the Parliament when hee should bee sent for; but when the Captain would have gone that way, it being out of the roade towards Westminster, the people would not suffer him; the Parliament [was] then sitting, but roase before hee could have got to them if hee had kept on his way. It being understood that the people would not permitt him to goe to Lambeth, the souldjours who kept guard at the Tilt Yard (all or most part of his attendants being passed by in the order of rank and file, of whome about 200 horse 4 in rank) made bould according to order, and tooke him away to a house beyond Jaunes; after candle-light hee was permitted to goe to the George in Kings street, where his wife





with friends had made provision for him. This short march has obtained too long a declaration.<sup>1</sup> H. W.

*London, March 17.*—A bill brought into the House of Lords f. 51b. for declaring of those that are summoned, and such as hereafter shall bee summoned by his Highness and approved by the Houses, nott exceeding the number of . . . to bee the other House of Parliament, formerly called the House of Lords, and to have all the priviledges belonging therunto, and not limited by the Petition and Advice, butt withall, that none of their heires, nor the heires of any others, shall claime right to sitt in that House, unlesse they bee first summoned and approved as aforesaid.

E. S.<sup>2</sup>

*London, March 19.* After 5 or six dayes debate of the f. 56b. Scottish Members right to sitt in the House of Commons, and being come very neere to a question theruppon, yesterday in the afternoon their was a question putt upon their withdrawing befor the maine question of their right of sitting was put, and that being put at 8 of the clock at night it was carryed in the negative (that they should not withdraw); and this was carryed by 60 voyces, the Seottish and Irish included. There was about 110 for their withdrawing, and about 210 for their not withdrawing; and now this day, being Saturday, they are about the question, whether they shall continue to sit their in a way of prudence and equity, or by way of right and law. The Commonwealth's men (so called) are, that the question may be upon their right and legality, and their opponents (the Scots' best freinds) are for their continuance upon a question of prudence, and would fortify it afterwards by Act of Parliament, and thus wee are striving for victory; and this day at

<sup>1</sup> For comments on this scene see the letter of Borieaux to Mazarin. Guizot, *Richard Cromwell*, i. 336.

<sup>2</sup> The journals of Cromwell's House of Lords are in the possession of Sir Leoford Portman. Very little of them proceedings in newsletters or news-papers.



12 of the clock they were not resolved of the question of right or prudence, but in short it is my thoughts that it will be carryed cleare for their sitting amongst us. The next debate will be upon the Irish Members, for which there is not so much to be said.

E. S.<sup>1</sup>

1. 66b. [March 31.<sup>2</sup>]-The account of these two last dayes proceedings is very small. Mr. Secretary Thurloe being much concerned in the former petition of Thomas which I mencioned in my last, haveing prepared himselfe by searching out the papers and examinacions taken against this Thomas, gave the House an account thereof, which being proved would amount to no lesse then high treason, and therefore moved for his commitment in order to his tryall at law. Upon this many debates followed with some heates or bitterness not fit to be mencioned; the result was the Sergeant at Armes should apprehend him, but I feare he will not be had.<sup>3</sup> It was moved for the Cavaliers to depart 20 miles from London, and spoken to by severall Members to have it done, but nothing was done. I believe it will within a day or two be moved againe and done, for the receiving such desperate Cavaliers' petitions will make them flock in swarms to the Parliament. At the committee of Greevances the Lady Hewet's petition concerning the execution of her husband Doctor Hewet was layd aside, in regard some Members of the other House being his Judges were concerned therein. If it shall bee tendred to the House, I hope it shall be rejected; I feare such petitions if not discountenanced and nipt in the bud will signifie little to a settlement. Something has been said that there should be Parliaments again in Ireland and Scotland, but I hope there are not many will yeeld to that. The petition concerning excize, customes, tonnage and poundage was

<sup>1</sup> Perhaps Capt. Edward Scotton, M.P. for Devizes, or Col. Edward Salmon, M.P. for Scarborough.

<sup>2</sup> Find it 4 in the MS.

<sup>3</sup> This took place on March 30. Burton's *Diary*, iv, 301.



read this day, and warmly debated, and adjourned till to morrow, to be resumed nothing to intervene.<sup>1</sup> Today 2 weekes hence is appointed to call the House, and to consider of a new way of distribution of Members to serve in Parliament for England.<sup>2</sup> A petition was read for the county and city or towne of Durham to be inabled to chuse and send Members to the Parliament, which is committed. I hope after wee are become a little cooler, and have a better understanding one of an other, and that all hopes of turning the government into a Commonwealth government is lost, wee shall redeem our so much lost time.

*April 2, 1659.*—This day a generall Councill of officers agreed f. 68b.  
upon these heads to be presented in Parliament in petition  
(1) The payment of their arreeres and their future pay to be  
ascertained (2) Indemnity in securing Cavaliers etc for the  
preserving the peace of the nations (3) In regard Massy is here,  
and Charles Steward and his brother expected here 4 May next,  
and in the interim the Councell meet three dayes a weeke, that  
provision therefore should be made against them. G. M.

*April 5.*—The Committee for drawing uppe the Army petition  
were Maj. Gen. Lilburne, Col. Ashtfield, Col. Myll, Lt. Col. Mason,  
Lt. Col. Pearson, Lt. Col. Haine, Lt. Col. Arnop, Lt. Col. Mayer,  
and Capt. Richard Deane.<sup>3</sup>

[*April 7.*]—Uppon Saturday last there was order given unto all f. 72b.  
the officers of the armies in England, Scotland and Ireland that  
were in or neere London to meete att Wallingford House. After  
wee were mett my Lord Fleetwood tould us the cause of our  
meeting was to let us understand the great sence hee had of the  
want of pay for the souldjers of the armies, and desired the officers

<sup>1</sup> See Burton's *Diary*, iv. 312-317, 327. This may refer either to the debate of March 31, or to that of April 1.

<sup>2</sup> These two votes were passed on March 31 (Burton, iv. 312). 'Today' is probably a clerical error for 'to-morrow.'

<sup>3</sup> The Petition is printed in the ed. *Parliamentary History*, xvi. 340; cf. Guizot, *Richard Cromwell*, i. 73d.



to consider of it, and after many speeches made by severall officers it was resolved, that it should bee referred to a committee of eight feild officers, three Collonells and five Lieutenant Collonels, a list of their names are here inclosed. That which was committed unto them was to drawe a draught of a representation, and a petition of all the officers to bee delivered to his Highnes uppon Monday. A draught of the representation was brought in at the generall meeting, and it was considered of part by part, and uppon Tueseday it was ordered to be drawne faire, and signed upon Wednesday, and delivered by my Lord Fleetwood, who was accompanied by all the officers that did subscribe it; the representation was delivered in Henry the Eight's Chamber.<sup>1</sup> J. M.

The representation and petition is ordered to bee sent into Scotland and into Ireland, for all the officers concurrence therein.

### Letter to General Monk

1. 79b. April 11, 1659.—This day Mr. Grove came to the other House attended with above 60 of the House of Commons to deliver to our House the declaration about the faste; our Speaker with the most part of the House went downe to the Barr uncovered, and received from them the message, which was delivered in these termes, that the Knights, Cittizens and Burgesses had sent to this House the declaration, and desired their concurrence therein; they attended in the haubbey [of] the House, their answer which was, that they would send it with messengers of their owne, which was thereafter given to them by our Speaker standing and uncovered, to convince them of the House their civillitie towards them,<sup>2</sup> whereas they have in their committee been upon severall debates ament what title to give to the other House and such like formalityes. We are to fall on debate of the declaration tomorrow, which I apprehend shall cost a great debate. We have also made ready a draught of

<sup>1</sup> See Ludlow's *Memoirs*, ii. 65, ed. 1894.      <sup>2</sup> *Ibid.* ii. 60, ed. 1894.





a proclamation for sending the new come over officers, and other Malignants that had been in armes, twenty miles from London, and intends to communicate it to them, that his Highness may be desired by both Houses to emitt it. The report of the treaty going on between France and Spaine may necessitate us to leave off many idle debates, and come to more substantiall correspondance. The army had their fest yesterday in my Lord Fleetwood's. The bill anent the excise was brought in to indure only during this Parliament, which will breed a great debate, for it must either cutt short the army, or prolong the Parliament very longe. Their is a vile paper called a Seasonable Speech spread to make Members of our House odious.

A. J.<sup>1</sup>

### Newsletters

[April 11.]—Yesterday the House resumed the consideration of £. 80. the arrears of the excise, and afterwards voted that none of their proceedings should bee hereafter published in the weekly print. That whole day was spent by the army in prayer and preaching at the Lord Fleetwood's howse, and carryed on by Mr. Griffeth, Mr. Peters, and other ministers. This day the House agreed with the declaration for a day of fasting, and sent it upp to the other House by Mr. Grove for their concurrence; their Lordships sent answer that the Howse would speedily consider thereof, and send answer by messengers of their owne. This afternoone a generall Councell of the army met at Wallingford House, and agreed to declare against Charles Stewart and his interest, and for the Protectors and the Parliaments to protect all such as have beene

<sup>1</sup> This was written by a member of the Second Chamber who had some connection with the Government of Scotland, probably by Archibald Johnston, of Warriston. The use of the word 'anent' seems to prove the author was a Scot. The 'speech' against the House of Lords referred to is that reprinted in Morgan's *Placuit Britannicus*, where it is attributed to Sir A. A. Cooper. It is also reprinted in the *Scots' Tracts*, vi. 466, and in Christie's *Life of Shaftesbury*, vol. i. appendix iv. There is no good ground for attributing it to Cooper. The full title of it is: *A Seasonable Speech made by a vnder Member of Parliament in the House of Commons, concerning the other House, March, 1659.*



ingaged in his<sup>1</sup> death, and so admonish the army to amity and unity, and to a strict walking before the Lord. It is observed that when Mr. Grove was called in all the other Howse was bare to him and the 50 that accompanied him, and see met them at their Barr againe upon their Lordships delivering their answer.

G. M.

f. 86b. [April 16.]—Yesterday the Howse ordered Mr. Bampfild [to be called to the chair], their Speaker, Mr. Chelmer Chute, being lately departed. This day was spent in a paper for grevances from the Quakers directed to their Speaker, who they desired would read it to the Howse. They begin thus (friends); after it was read two of them were called in, and the Speaker told them that the Howse did expect that they should returne to their severall howses, and live peaceably, and with submission to the lawes of the nation. The Lord Fleetwood, according to the order of the last Generall Councell, is (with the advice of such officers as hee thinks fit) drawing up the last heade agreed upon against the next meeting the 20<sup>th</sup> instant. The other Howse is yet debating their answer to the declaration for the fast, and the manner of sending the same to the Commons. The Lord Kensington dyed yesterday of the small pox; the Earle of Bedford is almost recovered thereof. The newse of the peace betwene France and Spaine is by letters this post confirmed.

G. M.

One of the Quakers was Cornett Billing.<sup>2</sup>

f. 86b. April 21.—Yesterday the House was resolved in a grand committee for considering upon the speedy payment of some moneyes to the army, which debate was adjourned till to morrow morning. This day hath been spent upon considering how the Militia may be best secured, which by the sence of the House appears to mee

<sup>1</sup> The late King's.

<sup>2</sup> See Fox's *Journals*, pp. 272, 277. This Cornet Edward Billing had been a soldier under Munch in Scotland, and was one of the founders of the Colony of New Jersey.



will be declared to consist in his Highnesse and both Houses of Parliament, but the debate is not come to a question as yet. Yesterday the other House met in the afternoone, and did debate concerning their approbation of the votes concerning the officers and their generall counsell, but their answer is not yet returned, for they have declared they will send it by messengers of their owne. I heare his Highnesse had some alarme yesternight, whereupon he tooke horse, and did visit the guards, but (blessed be God) there was no occasion of feets.<sup>1</sup> At his Highnesse's returne (as I am informed) Lee did call for Collooned Hacker, and conferr'd upon him the honour of Knighthood. I hope this businesse shall resolve in peace notwithstanding of some jealousies at present, and the rather because the peace betwixt France and Spaine is still reported here as concluded. W. R.<sup>2</sup>

*April 22, 1659.*—Munday last about 2 of the clock the officers according to his Highnesse's command attended him at Whitehall, where hee made knowne his pleasure that from henceforth the meeting of the officers in a Generall Councell should be dissolved (the Parliament having their desires under consideration), and then commanded them to repaire with all convenient speed to their respective commands in the 3 nations.<sup>3</sup> The Parliament that day lock't themselves close up, not allowing a Member to come out till 1 of clock, and ordered that there shall be no Generall Councell of officers of the army, without the leave, direction, and authority, of his Highnesse and both Houses of Parliament, and that no person shall have or continue any command or trust in any of the armyes or navyes of the 3 nations, who shall not subscribe, that he shall not disturbe or interrupt the free meetings in

<sup>1</sup> Cf. Guizot, *Richard Cromwell*, i. 364.

<sup>2</sup> Probably William Rose, one of the Scottish Members.

<sup>3</sup> See an account of this interview in a letter of Anthony Mordaunt's to Henry Cromwell, *London's Mercurie*, 1659, col. 1291. Cf. Guizot, *Richard Cromwell*, 364.



Parliament of any Member of either House of Parliament, or their freedoms in their debates and counicells. And that the concurrence of the other House be desired to these votes. It was referred to a committee to consider how his Highnesse, the Parliament, and the 3 nations, may be secured against the Cavaliers party. Another committee was appointed to prepare a bill for indemnifying of all persons that have served the Commonwealth. The other [House] spent much time in debate of the 2 first votes that were yesterday sent up to them concerning the officers and their generall Councell, but came to no result therein. It was Thursday referred to a committee to consider how the monyes owing to this Commonwealth may be brought [in], and also how money may be speedily raised for the army and navy, which was yesterday considered of by a grand committee of Parliament. Many officers met yesterday at Wallingford House, according to former adjournment of the Generall Councell, but sate not, because the Lord Fleetwood was going to the other House. The Lord Mayor and Court of Aldermen yesterday came downe with a petition to his Highnesse, wherein they declared that they will stand by him as their Chiefe Magistrate and the two Houses of Parliament with the utmost of their lives and fortunes, for which his Highnesse returned them thanks. The officers of the city trained bands presented to his Highnesse the representation in approbation of the late petition of the army. That night the Lord Fleetwood and the Lord Disbrow attended his Highnesse till 11 at night, and then declared their full satisfaction in what his Highnesse had then said to answer the desires of and to live and dye with the armies of the 3 nations, which hath since prevailed with the rest of the officers to acquiesce. Orders being last night given for the outguards to be very diligent, a troupe quartered at Islington at night appeared in armes, at which an alarme was taken by all our guards, which occasioned some preparations extraordinary at Whitehall and other guards. This day was spent by the Commons in debating his Highnesse to be Generall; to morrow it may probably come to a result.

G. M.





*April 23, 1659.*— Thursday night all the regiments heere both f. 87.  
horse and foote were in arms. That of the late Lord Pride  
march't into Whitehall without opposition. His Highnesse gave  
orders to Colonel Hacker's and other regiments to march to White-  
hall for the preservation of his person, but having before received  
other orders from the Lord Fleetwood, they with all the rest  
obeyed his Excellencie's rather then those from his Highnesse.  
All this was done without seizing any man's person, shedding a  
droppe of bloud, or making the least confusion in the city and  
suburbs. Yesterday his Highnesse signed a commission to  
dissolve both Houses. The other House sent the Black Rodde  
three times to the Commons to comede them for that purpose, butt  
because itt was nott brought by a Member of their owne, they  
refused to aduitt therof by the messenger,<sup>1</sup> against whome they  
lock't their doores, who theruppon by order of the other House brake  
his black rodde att the doore of the House of Commons in testi-  
monie of their dissolucion, which the Judges say is good in law,  
though the Commons have adjourned themselves till Munday  
morning. The Councill of officers mett this day debating what  
gouvernement shall bee sett'd, whether by the Petition and Advice,  
the Longe Parliament to bee recalled, or a new gouernement  
constituted. G. M.

*April 23, 1659.*— Thursday night the horse and foote in and f. 87b.  
about London were commanded into S. James's Feilds and other  
partes about Whitehall and Westminster, and when the Parliament  
mett on Friday morning they looked upon itt as a force upon  
them, and soe adjourned till Munday, butt this day his Highnesse  
dissolved the Parliament by proclamation. 'Tis rumoured in the  
towne that the French and Spaniard have made a peace, butt others  
say that the Spaniards have putt a slurie upon the French, and  
keepe the Infanta of Spaine to marry the Emperour, soe that's itt's  
conceiv'd itt will encrease the French very much. T. F.

<sup>1</sup> MS. = Mr. Tol.



Lieutenant-General Fleetwood to General Monk

1. Feb.

My Lord,—I doe presume that some late actions of the army may bee misrepresented unto you, for prevention wherof I shall give you a short account of affaires heere. Wee having received very certaine assurances of our old enemies designs and others to disturbe our pre-sent peace, wee were necessitated to draw the forces together in order to the security and peace of this citty and nation. Notwithstanding our intentions were for the good of the whole, yett I beleive some will very evilly represent us in this action, as if wee had forced the Parliament, though his Highnesse by his owne authority did dissolve them, in which the army did stand by his Highnesse. The present state of affaires are through mercy in much quietnesse, and the army in much union, and I hope your Lordshippe will nott give creditt to other information, butt preserve the union betwixt both armies as may inable them with joynt indeavours to serve his Highnesse in the further preservation of this good old Cause wee have bin soe longe engaged in, and nott suffer the attempts of any to devide us to take effect. The welfare of these nations being soe much concerned therein, I shall rest very confident your Lordshippe will preserve a right understanding betwixt us, wherby wee may bee the better inabled through the goodnesse of the Lord to answer the great ends of our trust. Your Lordshippe shall suddenly heare att large from mee concerning these affaires, and shall take itt as a great kindenesse from you rather to give creditt to my self then any other, wherin you may be assured I shall nott deceive your expectacion butt give you the true state of thinges; in the meane time [I] must abruptly breake of being very late, and remayne,

My Lord,

Your affectionate humble servant,

CHARLES FLEETWOOD.<sup>1</sup>

April 23, 59.

For the right Honorable the Lord Generall Monk, Scotland, Edinborough.

<sup>1</sup> Another copy of this letter is amongst Mr. Leybourne-Popham's papers.



## Secretary Thurloe to General Monk

*April 26, 1659.* I hope you will have heard before this comes f. 91.  
to your hands of the dissolution of the Parliament and of the  
manner of it. It hath pleased God that wee have since continued  
in peace; how long that mercy will be afforded, none can tell.  
The Cavalier party is exceeding busy, and will suddenly attempt  
something, if not prevented; wee will endeavour what wee can to  
doe it, and I desire your Lordship to be very vigilant to Scotland,  
where part of their designe is layed. This I am sure of, and it  
will be necessary that the forces be informed thereof, and be in a  
readinesse to suppress any insurrection of that kinde. I have  
this day received letters from France, assuring that the peace  
between France and Spayne is so farre advanced, that it can  
scarcely miscarry. It's said commonly, that all the points of it are  
agreed, but that I believe not. Generall Montagne arrived in the  
Sound the 6<sup>th</sup> instant; hee hath offered to both the Kings his  
good offices to make a peace between them, which neither of them  
seeme much to inclyne to. Nothing of action hath fallen out  
considerably between Denmark and Sweden of late. J. T.

## Newsletters

*April 29, 1659.* -Wee are all in much peace and quietnesse to f. 95b.  
the great disappointment of our enemies, and there is an hearty  
owning both of persons and things relating to our good old Cause  
and principles; and for a demonstration thereof there was this day  
received againe into the army, the Lord Lambert, Colonel Okey,  
Colonel Saunders, Major Packer, and Captain Gladman; which was  
done with very much joy and acclamation, and to the satisfaction  
of all our old and good freinds, and many good things are agreed  
uppon to bee putt in practice for the purging of the army, and  
for the putting of them into a condition of safety, both for the  
preservation of themselves and the nation.<sup>1</sup> J. M.

<sup>1</sup> Cf. letter of April 7. J. M. was an officer in the army, probably in the army  
in Scotland, and not in M.P. Perhaps Captain John Miller, if he was in England.



t. 96. *April 30, 1659.* This weeke a Councill of officer hath sitt att Wallingford House, consisting of these Lords, vizte, Fleetwood, Disbrow, Sydenham, Cowper, Jones, and Bery, Colonel Hacker, Lilburne, Ashfield, Salmon, Backstead, and Zanche; Lord Lambert, Colonel Okey, Colonel Saunders, and others lately added. They have spent much time in considering of a new Government, and incline to the calling of the Longe Parliament, and nominating a councell, who are said shall have a check or negative uppon them, others say nott. On Thursday last, the Councill ordered that the Lord Lambert shall command the Lord Faulconbridge's regiment, Colonel Okey the Lord Ingoldesbye's, Colonel Saunders that which was formerly his owne, Sir Arthur Heslerigge the Lord Howards, Major Packer and Captain Gledhill to bee alsoe reinvested in their former commands. Major Generall Overton and Colonel Rich are likewise under debate to bee readmitted. That day att a Councill of warre the Lord Ingoldesbye's Captain Lieutenant and Major Babington's Lieutenant were adjudged to loose their commissions.<sup>1</sup> Munday Major Babington likewise comes uppon a triall. That day or the next a Generall Councill of officers is intended, when an instrument for the next government is expected to bee reported. Some citizens have lately lent a monthes pay to the forces heere, and 6 weekes more they doe expect suddenly. Our fleet is in the Sound; the Dutch fleet is nott yett come thither. The peace betweene Spaine and France is nott yett fully concluded, though the articles for that purpose are heere printed. G. M.

Captain Elmore putt out of imployment.<sup>2</sup>

<sup>1</sup> See Ludlow's *Memoires*, ed. 1894, ii. 69 n.

<sup>2</sup> George Elmore, captain in Ingoldby's late regiment.





## APPENDIX

## APPENDIX A

COLONEL SEXBY'S ADVICE ON FOREIGN POLICY<sup>1</sup>

May it please your Highnesse,

Looking upon the interest of all the faythfull in the nation, and my self with them, as being intreated in that shipp that God hath made your Highnesse pilate off, I made bold, for preventing any warre that may arise to endanger or incommode her, to offer these following lines, (with submission) to your Highnesses perusall and consideration,

f. 126.

That it is England's and your Highnesse's intrest to prevent the makinge a generall peace is too obvious to the weakest witt and dimnest sight, that I shall not insist upon it to acquaint you what prejudice and danger would insue from it, your Highnesse being fully satisfied therein.

Nor in the second place shall further enlarge in giving reasons how much it were for your intre't and good of England to have some towne of concernment in France, which would not onely be a checke unto them, but an inlet to you at any time; from the Spaniard and Condy yow cannot expect any, they havinge none in their hands at present there that will be of any service to your Highnesse, being not upon the coast, therefore concerning that I shall say noe more. The maine thing I hint at and desire your Highnesse to waygh is, the preventing a generall peace, which if accomplis'd will cause high words to be spoken abroad, which will very much heighten discontented

<sup>1</sup> *Collection of Papers*, A. 1. 1. 196. On Sexby's relation to France, see Gardiner, *Complete Works of Lord Burghley*, i. 92, 376, 422, and the *Journal de Charles IX.*, 1566, Preface, pp. xlv, xlvii.



spirits at home ; encouragment for them to have there's noe need, as your Highnes dayly see.

The thing on which the conclusion of this peace hangs (if you conclud with the Dutch) is your Highnesses answer to the Spanish Ambassador, whose propositions to have yow joyne with them against France, (though many) will be reduced into these three heads.

1. To undertake the gaining some place in France by your selves, which will divert the King of France's forces from them that they may with more ease doe there worke in other parts.

f. 126b. 2. If not alone, then jointly with them, and to divide what yow take, being at halfe the charge.

3. If not alone, nor conjoynd, then to lend them soe many shippes men and horse as to secure Rochell, St. Martins, and the Isle of Casow in the River of Garon, for there money.

To all three I begg permission to give your Highnesse my pore simple judgement.

1. To the first of undertaking any thing upon your owne score by which yow declare a warre, will be very hazardous, England not being settled, and if it were, to undertake it as aforesaid yow must have your army consist of 20,000 foot, and 10,000 horse, and one hundred sayle of shippes at least ; in bank yow must have two millions ; upon entry yow must looke that all the power of France will appeare against yow, as being the foemiedle enemy, and soe suffer Spaine to doe what he will in other parts, knowing if they beate yow they will quickly run away, and if once yow receive a foyle, there or in any part which is considerable that yow owne, it would be a very great dishonor to your Highnesse and discouragement to the whole nation.

2. To the second 'tis my thoughts it were better to doe it alone, if yow had wherewithall, then joynly yow owning the warre, in that all the burden of gaining field or garrison would ly upon your men, and that halfe what was gained should be theres would but trouble an . . . spirit, and create contest, and ingender a warre betwine them and yow in the end.

Now seeing a generall peace is very dangerous, and that it will be certainly effected if the Embassador be not answered in one of these three propositions, 2 of which being not safe for your Highness to undertake if [you] had wherewithall, please to consider the third.

1. The risk yow run therein is onely the lives of men, which if



[they] misjearry cannot I can evell bid to your score, because the end was good and designe probable.

2. It can be no riske, danger, or breach betwix yow and France in lending or permitting them to hire shippes, men, and horse for their money, managing of it as I shall here after propose, but on the contrary, because of higher submition and greater condysention then yow have or can expect, as well as advantages for the present, and in a way of accomplishing what may be much greater for the future, if {you} gaine or accomplish what is designed, of which their is much probability, and litle doubt, except God hath designed the contrary, as will appaure by the following reasons.

1. It would take away the greatest part of the King of France's revenue, by which he would be rendered more uncapable to disserve you and serve him selfe.

2. It would bring in two hundred thousands pounds per yeare in customes and excise, besides all charges borne, from which two places now yow have not twenty, see farrme it upon that price, if settled there I would undertake it.

3. It would keepe a strikt hand and tie upon the Dutch, yea an emptier purse, and make the English more full, by ordering greater custums for the one to pay then th other, which might be done very justly, your Highnesse well knowing in the Sound we pay three times the customes they doe, as well as in other parts. Now there is not any place in Europe they drive a greater trade to then those two places.

4. The securcing those two places will give a true discrimination of the protestons hearts, who have professed as largely with thre tongues to mee, as well as under there hands, (as any people ever did), what they would doe if ever a power appeared, that they might confide in, from England.

5. It will not onely divert your enemies designs in forraigne parts against yow, but bring in the Irish, the major part of the enemies infantry, to serve you.

6. It will red yow of all discontented spirits at home, it being greater wisdome to have them vent their passion on your enemies then on your selfe, or to keepe them in prison to haughten them or to spend th on in the ruine of thre bodies.

7. This undertaken zeal if it may be managed will reduce yow most



part, it not all the Best [4] men of warre, as well as make uncapable the King of Spaine's fleet, which will be noe small advantage to the marchants, and see consequently to all England, in the flourishing  
 f. 128. of trade the people's minds are at quite having there purses and bellies full.

8. Permitting this will render yow master of all the mines in India, the King of Spaine and his slaves, your servants, the one in working to pit the Treasury, the other in fetching, coyned, and bringing it to yow, to enable the party to carry on this designe, which is the exalting your Highnesse's interest, and the accomplishing that designe your soule desire[s] to see effected.

9. It will make all the King of Spaine's fleet to be at your command, in that most of the mariners and souldiers therein are strangers, who affect the English nation above all others, upon which score yow may either draw them away to yow, or make them to declare they will not serve him any longer, except he give them him to command over them they shall desire.

10. It will bring the victuelling of all the Spanish fleet, &c. cloathing his army, into England, which will bee noe small advantage.

Having given my reasons for concurrence to the third proposition, I shall humble offer your Highnesse this way for the carrying on this businesse -

1. That it be undertaken by your selfe for privasie, which if not will be knowne, to order the number of shippes, foot, and horse, to such a place under such capitaines as yow shall thinke fit, for the better transportation to the place designed.

2. That all the shippes yow here imploy be such as yow have taken from the Dutch, which will be the lesse cause of suspicion, and can picke the least thereof against you after the businesse is effected, in case you see it not convenient to make upon your owne account.

3. That the foot and horse be taken out of your Highnesse's army, soe many out of every regiment, and if that you doe not find it convenient to take all out thereof, the person or persons that rayse any have commission from your Highnesse to rayse them as for Scotland, or Ireland, or to stay in England, to prevent any suspicion.

f. 129. 4. The shippes of warre, as well as those for the horse, foot, and prov'ision, to be ordered to the above said place, there to receive further orders.





5. The person your Highnesse intended should commaund them not to be knowne to any with them till after set sayle, and then he to declare his orders are not to breake upp his commission till [he] come at such a place. Now my Lord, the commission for the executing the designe should be from the Prince of Orindy, or Spaniard, soe that after they were at sea they should be desired to be shipped, men, and horses raysed upon the Spaniards' and Prince's score, the same permission said to bee given to the King of France or any other, if he or they desire it, and would give security the men levied by them should not serve the intrest of Charles Steward against England, which he will not, nor can never doe.

Also please take notice the Spaniard will presse your Highnesse to assist them in taking Callis, concerning which doe not medle for the present, for if your Highnesse had it, it would bee 2 hundred thousand pound: a years charge to England, and noe advantage except ready to enter with an army of 50,000 men, but in the other place he once gained and in safe hands your Highnesse will then know what to doe, and then yow shall not need fight for a towne on this side, I can assure yow if your Highnesse will except of it.

In the next and last place please to note the Spaniard, if [he can] not engage yow in the first two propositions, will demande how much money your Highnesse will take for the rayseing, arming, cloathing, and transporting soe many men and horse as will accomplish the worke, with fiftenth shipp of warre, consisting of betwix 20 and 30 gunes apeece, and 5 fire-ships, likewise for 6 months provision and pay for them.

Imprimis.— For 1900 foot, rayseing, arming, cloathing, and transporting, and paid by you till there arrive, at 8<sup>th</sup> a man amounts to 8000<sup>li</sup>.

	<i>li.</i>	<i>s.</i>	<i>d.</i>
For 6000 foot . . . . .	48,000	00	00
It. For 1500 horse at 25 <sup>th</sup> a man amounts to . . .	37,500	00	00
It. For 15-ships of warre 6 months, with five ships to hire, will amount to . . . . .	30,000	00	00
It. For a small traine and provisions . . . . .	50,000	00	00
Sume . . . . .	165,500	00	00

But it would be necessary for your Highnesse to ayle of them at least 300,000<sup>li</sup>, and they to pay them from the first day of there loading.



To shew your willingness to the effecting of which, your Highnesse may tell them, if there bee such a one as they cannot disburse such a sume at present, that your Highnesse will give them for one hundred of the three, five monthes liberty for payment, be ingageing in his Master's behelpe to see you satisfied at the end thereof.

Also I desire your Highnesse to take notice that I would bring into your owne Treasury out of the foregoing sume the odd sixty five thousand five hundred poulds (if your Highnesse will be pleased to follow my pore counsell) without doing wrong to any person.

[Endorsed :] Col. SIXTY.



## APPENDIX B

EDWARD MONTAGU'S NOTES ON THE DEBATES IN THE PROTECTOR'S  
COUNCIL CONCERNING THE EAST INDIAN EXPEDITION<sup>1</sup>*The Grounds of the undertaking, the Design of Attempting  
the King of Spaine in the West Indies*

April 20, 1654.—Upon the peace concluded with the Dutch wee found 160 sayle of beere ships well appointed swimminge at sea & store of land forces, all which required either to be lessend and layd downe, or to be employed in some advantageous designe.

1. The designes considerable to us were either to attempt upon France, whereto the Spaniard would have bene considerably helpfull ;

2. Or to attempt upon Spaine with the helpe of France ; or to have had freindshipp with both, supposinge wee might have had good summs of money from both soe to doe.

The attempt upon France was apprehended difficult and unprofitable, the Spaniard's aims beinge bet to set us two together by the eares, and then, if he had failed us in point of assistance, yett wee should not have found it easie to be disengaged againe. Also the weakening the French and greatening the Spaniard beinge the greatest prejudice to the Protestant cause all over Europ, the Spaniard beinge the greatest enemy to the Protestant, in the world, and a nation of greate counsell, and harder to be disposessed of any accessse of greatnesse : the French not soe bitter against the Protestants ; a people not to be kept from intestine divisions, and easilyer disturbed and distracted then the other at any tyme.

2. The attemptinge the Spaniard ; the most profitable of any in the world. The assistance of the French more sure then the other. The bodies of men more searse with him, and soe not soe difficult either to be attempted, nor soe much to be feared in offendinge us : his territories very greate and may well admitt a sound losse : the greatest enemy to the Protestant cause in the world ; an old enemy to

<sup>1</sup> From the Papers of the Earl of Montagu at His Highnes's, vol. i. p. 49. Both are written in Edward Montagu's hand.



this nation when it prospered best; and the feasibility of grabbing the West Indies from him. All which invites us both to action and that in this particular designe.

Now then for the attemptinge him in the West Indies wee considered his present power and possessions there, and the manner of his bringing home into Europe his treasure.

His possessions there are Hispaniola & Cuba, Mexico and Peru, the Quaracaeas,<sup>1</sup> and other parts adjoining. The posture he is in is this, he hath some garrisons and force there, principally (in Hispaniola) Santo Domingo, a towne well fortified towards the sea, but not soe to the landward; in it 300 soldiers, besides the inhabitants. (In Cuba) the Havana, a stronge fort but weakest to the landward. In the continent, Portobello upon the North sea, and Panama upon the South sea about 40 miles distant, and not soe stronge to the landward. Briefly he hath very few bodies of men, viz. soe many as will man his garrisons and keep his slaves to worke, but the country very inconsiderably plundred. The manner of his gettinge his treasure is thus: The cheife of his plate mines is in Peru, though there be some in Mexico and the Quaracaeas. Now he keeps 4 or 5 galloones in the South Sea coast only, and these receive the ore and carry it to Panama, from Panama they carry it by land to Portobello, where the Spanish plate fleet receiveth it and bringes it unto Europe. The Spanish fleet comes to the Havana by the Summer Islands, and soe on betweene Hispaniola and the Quaracaeas, all which way they have a very stronge current round about the bay of Mexico and a trade wind, by reason whereof it is impossible for a shipp to returne that way backe againe; soe that when they have received their loading from Portobello by the helpe of small vessels they goe on with the current and passe into the ocean from the Havana, which is the only way they can returne by; betweene Cuba and la Florida, and soe they come away for Spaine.<sup>2</sup>

Now towards this attempt, it was considered (1) whether wee should make a partill worke of it this yeare, an entrance for a future carriage the whole; (2) or to make a thorough worke and putt for all this summer.

Capt. Hattell and Capt. Lynceye (both which have lived and

<sup>1</sup> Canaan.

<sup>2</sup> On the point of departure the Spanish fleet arrived from America, *see Corbett, History of the Navy*, vol. 10, and 21-22. Gay's *Naval History of the West Indies*, vol. 16-17, pp. 15-22, 196-202.





traded in Hispaniola) inclined to a beginninge of the worke only this yeere, which they propounded thus viz: to possess Hispaniola and the Havana only, which they apprehend very feasible, and that being done wee have command of the Spaniard's fleet, that he can neither goe nor come, and soe he hath absolutely lost the benefit of the Indies. Then we have the advantage of Hispaniola (a country beyond compare as they describe it) for the transplanteing as much of our people from New England, Virginia, the Barbadoes, the Summer Islands, or from Europe, as we see requisite. Wee have the advantage of the wind to fall upon him where we will in the continent: and in short have (without much scruple) opportunity to carry the whole. Others thinke the whole worke to be attempted, upon these grounds: The advantage of it, the greatest that can be thought upon in the whole world: the Spaniard's plate fleet may be taken: our preparations sufficient: the Spaniard engaged in a warr with France, and very weak every where at the present, in soe much as he knew not where to get 2000 men to relieve Catalonia this best summer.

General matters, as our settlement at home, Scotland bringe not in our view to be settled without a transplantation of 8 or 10000 bodies of men every yeere, or else to maintaine a chargeable warr or force to secure them, and soe in England a considerable vent of men is necessary.

The worke is like to be more acceptable to the people of all sorts and the Parliament then any can be.

And if this opportunitye be omitted, it is to be doubted whether ever we shall be soe well fitted for it, or get the consent of a Parliament to doe it.

The inconveniences in our view.

1. The losse of the Spanish Trade, whereby much of all the cloath and stuffs are vented, and Spanish woolls imported, and our fishing trade to Newfoundland lost, whereby only we import yearly from Spaine 150,000<sup>li</sup> in peeces of 8.

This is thus answered: first that notwithstandinge our warr with the Spaniard in America, it is possible, if not reasonable to expect that wee may have peace and trade in Europe, for his necessitye of our trade will require it, but especially his interest in Flander, which he hath not only either to retaine with force, or to buye, but through our interest, while he be in our power in Europe he will certainly be inclined of



Secondly it is said that a full trade with Portugall (which wee can have as wee will) will be neere as good as the other. The importation of bullion will not be considerable to be answered if this designe succeeds.

2. Our other trade in the Streights will be carried on with greater difficultye.

Resp<sup>d</sup> that that will not proove soe, for having peace with the French (which must be supposed upon this war) we shall have the benefitt of their friendship and harbours upon the Mediterranean sea, which are much more usefull for us then the Spaniards<sup>1</sup>.

3. The Dutch can't judge the Spanish trade wholly and encreasinge in their riches by all their other trade may be invited to a revenge.

Resp<sup>d</sup>. Deus providebit.<sup>2</sup>

France esteeme[s] Holland a people not to be trusted, of noe faith because in the peace of Munster with the Spaniard, and also in the peace with England, they did not comprehend the Kinge of France, which by their adlvance with France they were bound to doe. Upon the conclusion of the peace with England the State of Holland did give a secret article they would never give their consent to choose the present Prince of Orange or any that shall descend from him Generall of their forces or Stattholder. Which article hath bred a greate and hartie division amongst all the states which hath noe support soe considerable as France, and upon this account their interest as to France seemes to be much changed.

The advantages of a Peace between France and England.

1. The hinderinge of a peace betweene the two great crownes.
2. Countenance and justification to the Protestant cause and partye.
3. Discountenance to our rebels in Scotland and fugitives.

<sup>1</sup> The following passage, though occurring in the text here, was evidently added later, and is therefore printed as a footnote:

<sup>2</sup> My Lord Protector's disposition of his fleet, 160 saile, May 1654.

In the Channel.	The Streights.	Scotland.	Ireland.	W. Indies.	Newfoundland.
40	16	8	8	30	8

The rest layd up and paid off.



[*A Debate in the Protector's Council*]<sup>1</sup>

*July 20, 1654.*—Wee cannot have peace with Spain out of conscience to suffer our people to goe thither and be idolaters. They have denied you commerce unlesse you be of their religion.

Lambert.

1. The work improbable.  
2. To farre off, havinge greater conveniements of settl[ing] at home.

3. Not like to advance the Protestant cause; or gaine riches to us or vent [for] troublesome people in England, Ireland, or Scotland.

4. The case at first wrong stated. The chardge not well considered. The regulation of our lawe and other conveniements not well taken care of it.

The settlement of Ireland in its government. Transplantation or not transplantation? Better wayes of vent for our people may be found then it.

Protector Resp.

Wee consider this attempt, because wee thinke God has not brought us hither where wee are but to consider the worke that wee may doe in the world as well as at home, and to stay from attemptinge untill you have superfluitie is to putt it off for ever, our expenses beinge such as will in probabilitye never admitt that.

Now Providence seemed to lead us hither, haveinge 160 ships swimminge; most of Europe our enemyes except Holland, and that would be well considered also; we thinke our best consideration had to keep up this reputation and improve it to some good, and not lay them up by the walls. Thence wee came to consider the two greate crownes, and the particula arguments weighed, we found our opportunitye point this way.

It was told us that this designe would cost little more then laying by the shipp, and that with hope of greate profit.

L[ambert's] reply.

Our armye in Scotland and armye and inhabitants in Ireland must quit the countrie, or you must find more treasure; or else the West

<sup>1</sup> The heading to this paper is not in the MS., but added by the editor.



India designe must be lost fall, and if any of these fall upon us what account shall we give to Parliament for it?

Resp.

The probability of the goal of the designe, both for the Protestant<sup>1</sup> cause and utility to the undertakers, and the cost noe more for one twelve month then would attend the shipp.

L<sup>[ambert's]</sup> reply.

Denyes the feasibility, and the sendinge away these shipp to require noe supply for a twelve months; besides casualtyes of diseases and wars that men are subject to, New England and the Barbadoes will not flocke to you in His<sup>[panish]</sup> <sup>[subd]</sup>, unlesse you be settled there in peace. Spaniard will certainly straggle as much as he can to preserve it. Whenever you doe lay doe ne your shipp the charge will be much increased and must be paid.

Resp.

Its hoped the designe will quitt cost. Six frigotts nimble [?] shall range up and downe the bay of Mexico to gett prey.<sup>1</sup>

<sup>1</sup> Papers of the Earl of Sandwich at Hinchinbrooke, vol. i. p. 55. All in Edward Montague's hand.





## APPENDIX C

AN ACCOUNT OF THE FALL OF THE PROTECTOR, RICHARD CROMWELL,  
IN A LETTER FROM NEHEMIAH BOURNE.

[This letter comes from the 'Massachusetts State Archives,' vol. 242, pp. 460-466. It appears to have been saved from the collections of Governor Hutchinson when his house was plundered in 1765. The Society is indebted to Mr. W. W. Dodge, of Cambridge, Massachusetts, for a copy of it. The contractions of the original have been extended.]

London 20 3 mo. 1659

Sr - I know your soule long & earnestly to heere her matters goe with the people and cause of god, and alsoe the condition of this pore conflicting tossed nation; and therefore thought at this Juncture I have my hands and thought-ful, and I hope you may have better intelligence from clearer heads, and such who have more leisure to give yow their particuler observations, yet I can not be altogether silent at such a day as this, wherein the lord Jehovah hath most eminently and signally once more appeared for his owne grate name, And hath soe farre owned the Interest of his sonne, And his pore servants in this Nation, who hath bene praying and waiting for him, yet little expecting his soe suddaine manifestation. In soe much that we are like men in A dreame, and almost Amazed at his unexpected appearens, in this late grate Revolution, And change of the whole Civill Government of these Nations. The manner of which if I had time to lay before yow in all the strange Circumstances thereof, I know your harte, yea all that love the lord, would wonder and Ascribe glory to him alone; for there hath bene the clearest hand of god there-in, that ever was seene, since the beginning of our late trialls And Conflicts, in soe much as there is not a man living who can in the least Challenge a share here-in. For Although many worthy and Renowned persons have bene labouring, yet that all Confes the Labie of this which is now brought about was not in their thoughts to obtaine at this season. I resume yow had by the last ships an Account of the siting of the late Parliament, and of what A Mixture and Completion they were of, they Consisting of three sortes,



(viz) the old cavalier, the new courtier, And the Commonwealth partie, who by very much were the most Inconsiderable as to Number Compared with either of the other. I doubt not but yow had an accompt of what they did at there entrance, And what great debates were Aboute A thing called the other hows. Therefore in a worde I shal onely hinte what more especially concerns the late Counterplott, whos contriuer and Acter was onely the lord 'who as he is deepe in Counsell soe alsoe is wonderful in working.' About 28 days since the harts of most of the lords people (who were upon there watche both in the Nation, and especially in the Citty), being greatly awakened and alarmed by the post best that was made by the majority of the howse to Introdus Kingship, and with it al manner of Tirriny and oppression, both upon the Ciuill and Spirital Liberties of the Saints, soe dearely purchased longe since by the precious blood of our lord Jesus, And of late by the vast treasure and blood of soe many choyse Saints. And perceauing plainly that there Cause was desperat as to all human hopes, the honest party in the howse not being able to carry one voate, though neuer soe much Reason was on there side, which the other party Confessed they could not ouerthrow; I say when things looked with this darke vissage, many of the good people (whose harts and hands the lord had in some measure kept cleane, And Innocent as to the laite general Apostacy),—pardon the expression for its too manifest—they began together to seeke the face of god, And consult what might be there duty at such a time. The lord was pleased to stirre up many of them to apply to the officers of the Armie (who were many of them about the Citty, but there forces scattered about the Countries), And several serious debates were had Among t them, yet there harts generally down as to any greate expectations, many tender soules, both in the Armie as alsoe In other publick Imployments, ready to give up their places, as not able to stand under there trauels, but Rather had there harts upon the wings, and were thinking of noe thing but suffering or quitting the place. But in a shorte time the generallity of the officers of the army (who had not soe farr debauched there prinsiples and spirits as to lick up there venitt without Reluctensy) began to gather blood and spirits, and came up to the superior officers, And began to worke upon them alsoe, who by this time were themselves Incluable to here, and Resolved to meet together, and whet up one anothers spirits, and Revive the good old Cause for which they had bene ingaided soe



deeply. And accordingly they came together to Wallingford Hows, which is the Lord Fleetwoods Quarters, where was a general counsel held, and all things carried with much tendernes and sobernes, not haueing it in the least in there thoughts at this time (I am very confident being witnes) soe much as to cause the least interruption to the Parliament; but finding a concensus of spirit unanimously in the Armie to looke backe to what they had sworne And promised, And to take shame for there owne preuarications, they all agreed to Represent there desires to the late Protector, and therein thought it incumbent on them at this Juncture to asserthe there owne cause, the Rather that it was become a matter of scorne and Reproach euen to the members of Parliament. And noe wonder when as a greate number of them were scarce come from the nurs at the time when god brought us at first out of Egypt, and neuer understood his wonders there, nor at the Red Sea, and soe open were many of the Councillers of Parliament that they said they would haue a Kinge And Lords before they [left] the howse. And what Kinge thinke yow? I can tell because I haue good Authority for it; this Gentleman, who they would haue made soe much hast to dress And set on horsebacke, was but to waime the saddle for another whome they better loued and liked, which now is unRiddled more plainly. But to winde up this bottome. The Officers meeting as also the Representations, did soe much trouble and anger the two first parties in the Howse, yea the Protector (then soe called) was not pleased herewith, howeuer he kept his Countenans for the present upon the[m]. The Parlemt in greate hast past the Inclosed voats, and satt about it til 9 or 10 a clocke at night, And would here no desuation from those that desented, but in greate herte and displeasure shut it up. The officers of the Armie, though very quiet in language, and Carriages, yet not without sens how much the safety of the nation, as alsoe there owne, was in exstreme danger (the King of Scotts haueing at this time about 2000 offisers commissioned in and aboute London, who kept there meetings, greate preparations both for sea and land on the other side of the water, and he him-selfe in disguise both in Flanders and Holland), they now Judged it the time to consulte there duty to god And the pore people of these nations, who were not like to be sould for Bondiaen, but there very lives like to be at the mercy of there cruil and implacable Enimies, the designe of the Parliament being mouered, (viz) to vote Richard laite Protector General of the Armies, and soe giue him the sworde who



had sufficiently before appeared to discountenance the faithful officer and embrace flatterers, and creatures of his owne, soe that he would some have modeled (or Rather deformed) the Armie to his best purpos, A number already prepared to othe him as there general, who had assured him of a considerable interest in the armie. This voate being passed, the Protector the same time knowing wel that the armie were awakened, he sends for the officer, to come to him; unto whom when they were come, he gave his Counsel to conforme to the Parliament voate, to departe and move noe more, And threatened them if they should disobey him who was there General; which titel he had severall times before Assumed, And once respectfully A few daies before when he caused them to be drawne up in the Parke, where he presented himselfe to them under such a notion, and gave the souldiers money (to small purpos, for they in there hart disaunted him). This being done he grew Jealous of the officers, though they soe far obeyed him as they forbore any general meeting, And used all means to obtaine A right understanding; for which purpos Fleetwood and Disborow and others went to him, and deswaded him from urging the Generallship by his Courtiers in the Parliament, which he promised them he would, And that there should be noe thing done in it; never the lesse the same howe or very little more, used at his Interest, And his whole party joynd with theould Caulier to carry it on to make him General, which thinge soe hiely dissatisfied the whole Armie that the very Coman Soulger cried out against it, and urged there officers to remember the cause for which they had soe many times bled. And now it began to worke to purpos. I was a witness of most of thes things, and speake what I know, And I am certainly informed And believe it, That Fleetwood, And Disborow, and some others were appointed to be Seized on, but by providens escaped that plott. The evening before that breaking up there with some other officers held a counsell at Jameses House, to which place the protector sent, Requiring the two persons before mentioned to come to him to White Hall, where were assembled with him, Coll. Goff, Coll. Whalley, Coll. Inglesby, Coll. Mills, and Lego, with severall of his new created lords, and his greate Secretary, and the Lord Broghill. But the Gentlemen had secretly warning of his designe, And having somewhat else under consideration that they excused there denial and appeared not. He at the same time had sent for his life guard, which was there with him, and a few broken companies, And two broken troops that were





seduced by the Officers; And al the force his 7 Colonels could raise for him out of all there Regiments of horse and foott were not 3 Companies nor 2 troops, but three whole Regiments marched away, yee the Protectors owne Regiment went away cleare from him to the Armie, who about midnight without sounde of Drum or Trumpet were at Randevoos, maniously crying up the good old cause, And A Commonwealth, and noe single person. This night was the Brightest apperans of the lord that hath bene in our age, hazard was extreame greate, none knowing how the thing would take with the Soulliers til trial, And noe thinge but A poize upon there spirits could possibly have kept them soe quiet and Right, not withstanding all means possible was used to draw them to sheath there sword in there Fellows bowels, And could those officers with him have made a party he would doubtles have put al into a flame. But in the morning there was a cleare dissition and discovery of the lords hand, to Adulteration of al; for I am bound to say we were neuer in such a Crisis, neither could any man beleve such a thinge had bene possible as was now made practicable. And that night messages past betwixt White Hall and Jameses, there being two distant parties, neuertheless al means was used to perswade the Protector to Accomodate the Buines, And not to put al to Hazard. But he was lightened by false Suggestions, And hopes he had conceaved which he found to faile him, And in the Issue against his will he consented to breake up the Parliament, And for that end sealed an Instrument and sent to the two Houses, And withal put forth a declaration herinclosed; all which was accordingly done, which caused noe small stirre in the minds not onely of the broken Parliament but of the whole nation, yet through gods wonderful providens not a drop of Blood shed, which is marvelous in our eyes who beheld it. The Parliament being thus desolved, yow may Judge In what a condition affairs stood, the Protector, in a manner insignificant, havinge not lost onely the hearts, But the name of an Armie, Noe power then visible, neither was any provision made beforehand, nor Resolves taken what to declare for sunnys after. I am sur all Indianour were made by the principal officers in the Armie to pece and mend up that crake Government; And I am sur what I say is truth, (havinge opportunity enough to know there debuits) the utmost they had in vew when this was first entered upon was, to Settle the Militia in safe hands, take away his Negative, And Remove his Sycophants, and Parasits, And fill up the Counsel wth good and able



men. But none of all these would be granted, nor there must not one be touched, but rather Adventure the peace and safety of the nation. Now whilst for divers days the things were under a close debate And consideration, The Mallice of the City and many considerable honest persons well affected out of severall parts made their addres to the generall Counsel of officers, then sitting daily at Wallingford House, And with unanimous Consent declared against touching the late made government, or new strange Instrument and Advice, And were zealous to lay it wholly aside, and call the old Parliament (as being the onely visible way and means of our Settlement And safety). Besides this all the Inferior officers of the Armie, yea whole Regiments of Souldgers gave in there petitions for it, And almost all persons well affected Centered therein (though they had there fears, yet this was the best that could be found). I know this met with much opposition, And yet at length the providence of god brought it about by means of A Comittie of the Armie, who met A number of the old Parliament men, Amongst which Sir Henry Vaine and Sir Arther Haselrigg, our two eminent good Instruments for the accomodating things betwixt them. And accordingly on the 7th of May they Sett, And there our Speaker in the Chaire, which was to the rejoycing of the generality of honest hearts, And the confutation and Astonishment of the Enemy, yea of all strangers, And the Intendants And Agents in Towne, who are scarce come to them selves to this day, But are filled with wonderment to see such a total subversion of A government, And Behould all shops open, Tradesmen in there calings, And not a broken patte, as sum of them have expresed. Yea, and let me tel yow, This is noe lesse Admirable in the eyes of the most sober And godly, both within and without the Armie, considering what means was used to sett al in A flame both in City and Cuntry, But all proved vneffectual (the lord preventing all such attempts). During the Consults aboute the Government to be Establisht yow will Imagine what spirit ranne thorow the nation. I shal onely minde yow againe, That there was labouring and Indeanouring to patch And Amend the broken Image (especially by the greate ones), But the meaner sorte of the officers, together with the honest people that flocked in to them, Caried it cleare for this Parliament. Immediately after they were Set, divers of the Secluded members of 1647 Indeanours to prevent the howse, And chalenged there places; And some small contest was betwixt them and others who had that care



and charge under there hands, But at last they withdrew, seeing what was Resolved, that none should sitt Butt such as were in 48, And had gone alonge wth them in charge of gouernment, In takinge of the Kinge and houses of Peers, viles they would take the Ingaignment. Sins there Siting they chose a comittie of safety about 12 days agoe : Lord Fleetwood, Lord Lambert, Sir Henry Vaine, Sir Arther Hazelrige, Major Sauey, Mr Scott, Left-General Lodlow, Coll. Sidenham ; And on Satterday last they chose A council of Staite, which being Settled the Comittie of Safety determined. The General counsel of Officers haue likewise made a beginning to purge there owne body, By discarding some, And Restoring others, who for conitions sake quited there comands under the old Protector, or were by him turned of as not serving his turne, yea some of his oudest and best friends, (viz) Lord Lambert, Coll. Clay, Coll. Sanders, Major Packer, Capt. Gleanam. And since have restored Sir Arther Hasbriicke, And diuers others alsoe are under Consideration to be Reinstated with there Comands, Amongst which is Coll. Whitcham, Gouernor at Port-smouth. Of al which yow may here more particularly heere after, for they are now but beginning to worke. I haue Inclosed sent yow some papers which may better informe yow then this scribbled confused Naratiue, onely by this yow may see at things. And take this from my hand, that the Lord is present eminently In the Armie, with A sober, Serious, yet warme and lively Spirit of Zeale and Courage for him and his cause ; And if yow had seene them in all this late agitations, you would Rather haue judged them Lambs then Lions by there deportment and carriage, which much enlarges my Soule to hope that the lorde is abought to doe some greate worke by them. I am much content with them in there meetings, And haue had optunity to know there spirits In this Juncture, which I enioysein, and yet am not with out my fears. But I know the lord liues and reines, And his purposes and promises shal stand good to al Intents in all generations ; though we Are A back-sliding and sinneful people, that haue shamefully blotted out his name to set up our owne, yet he remains faithful and full of compassion, And knowes how to recouer and heale vs, as alsoe to pardon vs freely for that names sake of his which we haue profaned.

As for Scotland we haue a full and an Ample concurrens of the Commanders in cheife And al the Armie, who fully adhere to the Armie sent : And as if there had bene a Counsel held betwixt them In



continuation, they alsoe unanimously erie up the old Parliament And A Comanwealth, though they could not possibly know the thinge that was in debate.

As for shoud they are quiet alsoe, the General of that Armie concurring with us here, though there hath bene of late A new Model begun After a patterne of what was first attempted here. And the Lord Henry Cromwel, there Comander, hath written his letters to the Lord Fleetwood that he shal equies In the issue of what shal be donne here, soe that the fears of some upon that accounte are taken away very much.

As for our fleet now in the soude, consisting of 40 Ships of warr Comanded by Lord Mountague, we have noe feare of them, because the generality of the Comanders are such who haue served A Comanwealth heretofore, And have to tell the differens betwixt one And other gouernment. In the narrow Seas and downe my Brother<sup>1</sup> is Comander In cheefe, Being Reare Admiral of England, who hath with his Squadron acknowledged And gladly Embraced the change. Thus I haue in briefe given yow A Rough Draught of the state of affairs at this day, to the ende yoa may haue your haite drawne forth to seeke in the behalfe of these poor nations that are thus frequently emptied from vessel to vessel, And Turned, yea overturned.

As for forraigne newes, I beleeve the unexpected change of this gouernment from monarkie to A free state And Comanwealth doth amaze our nighbors, And put them upon new Counsels, of which we shal suddainly be Informed.

The peace betwixt france and spaine is Reported by some to be Concluded, by others to be doubtful. And by al it is questioned, that if in case it be not far gone Already, It wil be now Impeded, there being greate desier on both sides to Attaine a peace betwixt Spaine and England.

The Hollander hath made very greate preparations for warre, and is gone to the Soude with a fleet of men of warr; we are in doubt what the Issue wil be when our Fleet and thers meete, we hope an expedient may be found to preserve peace, unless the Hollander be too deepe in the Confederacy betwixt spaine, France, And the Austrian faction, which is much suspected, for doubtles at this Juncture there is A continuation of Counsels And forces of al the professed Enemies

<sup>1</sup> Rear-Admiral John Bourne.





of Christ. And their design are hid against him and his people very deeply and strongly. But truly we are in some measure raised in our hopes that the Lord hath begunne to breathe a spirit of life in dead bones, which he is gathering together to declare his power in them. Wherefore I beseech you strive together earnestly with the Lord that he will Arise and have mercy upon Sion, for we hope the time is coming wherein he will be God for his people, and subvert the mountains of the world. And in pure conuersion for new clothing, that by all the winnowings and sittings we may find the figure of his spirit, as it is a spirit of judgement and burning.

If opportunity offer, And that I can Redeem some much time, I shall endeavour to communicate what shall come to my knowledge worthy of your view, for certainly very groute things are upon the wheele.

END OF VOL. III.

Printed by J. G.

Printed by J. G. at the University of Cambridge.

1848.

5075 1  
5511







